



UNIVERSITY OF
LIVERPOOL

1
2 **The Search for Long-lived Particles with the**
3 **FASER Experiment at the LHC**

4 A thesis submitted in accordance with the requirements of the
5 University of Liverpool for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy

6 **Charlotte Cavanagh**

7 Supervised by

8 Professor Monica D'Onofrio

9 Dr Carl Gwilliam

10 Department of Physics

11 Oliver Lodge Laboratory

12 University of Liverpool

13 September 2024



Abstract

16 This thesis documents the results of analyses searching for long-lived particles (LLPs) using the
 17 FASER experiment at the Large Hadron Collider. The results of the search for dark photons A'
 18 at FASER with the signature $A' \rightarrow e^+e^-$ are presented. This analysis uses proton-proton collision
 19 data at a centre of mass energy of $\sqrt{s} = 13.6$ TeV corresponding to an integrated luminosity of 27.0
 20 fb^{-1} collected by the FASER experiment in 2022. The search provides sensitivity to dark photons
 21 with couplings $4 \times 10^{-6} < \epsilon < 2 \times 10^{-4}$ and with masses $10 \text{ MeV} < m_{A'} < 80 \text{ MeV}$, providing
 22 world-leading exclusion limits for dark photon masses $17 \text{ MeV} < m_{A'} < 70 \text{ MeV}$ and couplings 2
 23 $\times 10^{-5} < \epsilon < 1 \times 10^{-4}$ [1]. The results of this analysis are also reinterpreted for the $B - L$ gauge
 24 boson model.

25 The results of the search for axion-like particles (ALPs) a with coupling to the $SU(2)_L$ gauge
 26 boson with the decay signature $a \rightarrow \gamma\gamma$ are also presented. This analysis uses proton-proton collision
 27 data at a centre of mass energy of $\sqrt{s} = 13.6$ TeV corresponding to an integrated luminosity of
 28 57.7 fb^{-1} collected by the FASER experiment in 2022 and 2023. This search provides sensitivity
 29 to ALPs with couplings $10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1} < g_{aWW} < 10^{-3} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ and masses $60 \text{ MeV} < m_a < 500$
 30 MeV , providing world-leading exclusion limits for ALP masses $100 < m_a < 250 \text{ MeV}$, with coupling
 31 $3 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ and $5 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ [2].

32 Additionally, models where ALPs interact either exclusively with photons or with gluons are
 33 considered for interpretation using the selection outlined in the search for ALPs with coupling to
 34 the $SU(2)_L$ gauge boson. In the case of the ALP coupling to photons, ALP masses up to $m_a \sim$
 35 80 MeV are excluded and previously unexplored parameter space around $g_{a\gamma\gamma} \sim 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ is
 36 probed. In the case of the ALP coupling to gluons, FASER probes unconstrained regions around
 37 the π mass and η meson mass where production rates is enhanced due to resonant mixing. The
 38 analysis also has reinterpretation potential for the $U(1)_B$ gauge boson, the up-philic scalar, the
 39 Type-I two Higgs doublet model, and the dark photon.

40 The results of the 2021 calorimeter test beam are also discussed, as well as the planned preshower
 41 detector upgrade and the resulting impact on future ALP searches.

42 **Declaration**

43 I confirm that this thesis is my own work, except where explicit reference is made to other
44 works. This work has not previously been submitted to any institute, including this one.

45 *Lottie Cavanagh*

47 Contents

48	List of Figures	xxiv
49	List of Tables	xxviii
50	1 Introduction	1
51	2 Theoretical Overview	4
52	2.1 The Standard Model of Particle Physics	4
53	2.1.1 Quantum Electrodynamics and Electroweak Unification	6
54	2.1.2 Quantum Chromodynamics	7
55	2.1.3 The Standard Model Lagrangian	7
56	2.2 Shortcomings of the Standard Model	8
57	2.2.1 Dark Matter	8
58	2.2.2 Baryon Asymmetry and CP Violation	11
59	2.2.3 The Hierarchy Problem	11
60	2.3 Motivating the Search for Dark Matter	11
61	2.3.1 Detection Methods	12
62	2.3.2 WIMPs and Thermal Relic Density	12
63	2.3.3 Dark Sector Models	14
64	2.4 Motivating a Forward Search at the LHC	16
65	2.5 The Dark Photon	16
66	2.5.1 Dark Photon Production and Decay	17
67	2.5.2 The Parameter Space and Existing Limits	20

68	2.6	Axion-like Particles	21
69	2.6.1	ALPs with Coupling to Photons	22
70	2.6.2	ALP with Coupling to Gluons	23
71	2.6.3	ALPs with Coupling to the $SU(2)_L$ Gauge Boson	25
72	3	The FASER Experiment	29
73	3.1	The LHC	29
74	3.1.1	Luminosity	32
75	3.2	The FASER Detector	33
76	3.3	Detector Components	37
77	3.3.1	FASER ν Emulsion Detector	38
78	3.3.2	Scintillators	39
79	3.3.3	Tracking Spectrometer	43
80	3.3.4	Electromagnetic Calorimeter	47
81	3.4	Trigger and Data Acquisition	48
82	4	Event and Object Reconstruction	53
83	4.1	Event Reconstruction	53
84	4.1.1	Track Reconstruction	53
85	4.1.2	PMT Waveform Reconstruction	55
86	4.2	Calorimeter Response	58
87	4.2.1	Energy Response	59
88	4.2.2	Corrections and Local Effects	61
89	4.2.3	Energy Resolution	63
90	5	The Modelling of Physical Processes and Statistical Analysis	65
91	5.1	Monte Carlo Simulation and Event Generators	65
92	5.1.1	MC Event Generators	67
93	5.1.2	FORESEE: The Forward Experiment Sensitivity Estimator	69
94	5.2	Modelling of the Dark Photon and ALP Signal	70
95	5.3	Overview of MC Background Samples	72

96	5.3.1	Modelling of Far-Forward Neutrino Interactions	72
97	5.3.2	FLUKA and Large-angle Muon Simulations	73
98	5.4	Statistical Analysis	74
99	5.4.1	The HistFitter Framework	75
100	5.4.2	Fit Configuration	77
101	6	The Search for Dark Photons	80
102	6.1	Dataset and Simulation Samples	80
103	6.2	Event Selection	83
104	6.3	Background Estimation	85
105	6.3.1	Neutrino Background	86
106	6.3.2	Neutral Hadrons	87
107	6.3.3	Inefficiency of the Veto Scintillators	88
108	6.3.4	Large-angle Muons	88
109	6.3.5	Non-collision Backgrounds	93
110	6.3.6	Summary of Total Expected Background	94
111	6.4	Systematic Uncertainties	95
112	6.4.1	Signal Theory Uncertainties	96
113	6.4.2	Experimental Uncertainties	96
114	6.4.3	A Summary of Systematic Uncertainties	101
115	6.5	Results	101
116	6.5.1	Reinterpretation: The $B - L$ Gauge Boson	104
117	7	The Search for Axion-like Particles	106
118	7.1	Dataset and Simulation Samples	106
119	7.2	Event Selection	109
120	7.3	Background Estimation	115
121	7.3.1	Neutrino Background	116
122	7.3.2	Neutral Hadrons	124
123	7.3.3	Inefficiency of the Veto Scintillators	124
124	7.3.4	Large-angle Muons	125

125	7.3.5	Non-collision Backgrounds	131
126	7.3.6	Summary of Total Expected Background	132
127	7.4	Systematic Uncertainties	133
128	7.4.1	Theory Systematic Uncertainties	134
129	7.4.2	Experimental Systematic Uncertainties	136
130	7.4.3	A Summary of Systematic Uncertainties	140
131	7.5	Results	140
132	7.5.1	ALPs Coupling to Photons	145
133	7.5.2	ALPs Coupling to Gluons	146
134	7.5.3	Reinterpretations	146
135	8	The Calorimeter Testbeam and Preshower Detector Upgrade	151
136	8.1	The 2021 Calorimeter Testbeam	151
137	8.1.1	Energy Calibration	153
138	8.1.2	Test Beam Simulation	154
139	8.1.3	Preshower Correction	156
140	8.1.4	Energy Resolution	157
141	8.2	High-Precision Tungsten-Silicon Preshower Detector Upgrade	159
142	8.2.1	Sub-detector Layout	159
143	8.2.2	Monolithic Readout Chip	161
144	8.2.3	Prototype Tests for Pre-production	161
145	8.2.4	Tests of Production Chips	163
146	8.2.5	Implications for Future ALPs Search	164
147	9	Summary	166
148		Appendices	167
149	A	FASEr's EM Calorimeter	167
150	A.1	Calorimeter Corrections	167
151	A.2	Calorimeter Energy Uncertainty	167

152	B ALP Signal Selection: Tracking Variables	171
153	Glossary	178
154	Bibliography	194

List of Figures

155

156	2.1	The observed galactic rotation curve (data points) for the M33 galaxy showing the	
157		contributions from the stellar disc and gaseous disc and the dark matter halo con-	
158		tribution needed to match the data.	9
159	2.2	A composite image showing the galaxy cluster 1E 0657-56, regions of hot gas are	
160		shown in pink, regions where most of the mass density lies are shown in blue.	10
161	2.3	Thermal freeze-out of dark matter for different annihilation cross sections. The	
162		comoving number density Y and resulting thermal relic density Ω_χ of a 100 GeV	
163		dark matter particle as a function of temperature T . The solid line represents the	
164		dark matter cross section that yields the correct relic density, the coloured bands	
165		show the density for cross section variation of order 10, 10^2 and 10^3 from $\Omega_\chi \sim 0.23$.	
166		The dashed line shows the number density of a particle that did not “freeze-out” but	
167		remained in thermal equilibrium.	13
168	2.4	The different portals involved in dark sector dark matter models. The four main	
169		portal types are highlighted: Vector, Scalar, Neutrino, Axion, grouped by those that	
170		require renormalizable coupling and those that require higher operators.	15
171	2.5	Feynman diagrams for LLP production processes: dark photon production from pion	
172		decay (left), dark photon production via dark bremsstrahlung (right). The red circle	
173		indicates the kinetic mixing parameter ϵ	18
174	2.6	Inelastic dark photon production cross section (per ϵ^2) as a function of mass. The	
175		total cross section and the far-forward cross section are shown.	18

176	2.7	(Top) The decay length of the dark photon in the parameter space that FASER is sensitive to. (Bottom) The branching fractions of the dark photon into leptonic and hadronic final states, as a function of dark photon mass.	19
177			
178			
179	2.8	Existing experimental constraints in the parameter space probed in FASER's search for dark photons. Includes existing limits from the BaBar collaboration, the KLOE experiment, the LHCb collaboration, NA62, NA64, NA48, E141, Orsay, NuCal, E137, CHARM.	20
180			
181			
182			
183	2.9	(a) ALP-photon production via the Primakoff process in which a photon is converted into an ALP when colliding with a nucleus. In the context of FASER, this would be LHC infrastructure, most likely the TAN (neutral particle absorber). (b) The production rate of ALPs from the Primakoff process within an angular acceptance $\theta < 0.2$ mrad with energy $E > 1$ TeV.	22
184			
185			
186			
187			
188	2.10	ALP-photon decay to two highly energetic photons.	23
189	2.11	(a) ALP-gluon production via pion mixing.(b) The production rate of ALP-gluon from $\pi^0 \rightarrow a$, $\eta \rightarrow a$ and $\eta' \rightarrow a$ within an angular acceptance $\theta < 0.2$ mrad with energy $E > 1$ TeV.	24
190			
191			
192	2.12	ALP-gluon decay to two highly-energetic photons, using pion mixing.	24
193	2.13	ALP production via top loop, involving B meson decay to kaon and a W boson.	25
194	2.14	The production rate of ALPs from B meson and Kaon decays in the mass range of interest in this analysis. There are four production modes relevant to this ALP model: $B^0 \rightarrow X_s a$, $B^\pm \rightarrow X_s a$, $B_s \rightarrow X_s a$ and $K \rightarrow \pi a$. The shaded bands indicate the uncertainty associated with these production modes.	26
195			
196			
197			
198	2.15	A typical ALP decay signature to two highly collimated and highly energetic photons in the case of the ALP-W model. The red circle indicates the ALP coupling constant g_{aWW}	26
199			
200			
201	2.16	Existing experimental constraints in the parameter space probed in FASER's search for axion-like particles with coupling to the W boson. Includes existing limits from NuCal, NA62/64, beam dumps, KTEV, KOTO, E949, CDF, BaBar, E137, NA62, SN1987, NA62, E949, LHCb and LEP.	27
202			
203			
204			

205	3.1	A diagram of the CERN accelerator complex, modified to include FASER in the	
206		TI12 tunnel that connected the LHC and the SPS in the time of LEP.	30
207	3.2	Schematic diagram of the octants of the LHC. It shows the 4 interaction points where	
208		the largest experiments are situated.	31
209	3.3	The instantaneous luminosity measured at IP1 and the total and coincidence trigger	
210		rate recorded by FASER for 2 LHC fills in May 2024. The instantaneous luminosity	
211		is provided by ATLAS and shown in blue, the total trigger output rate is shown in	
212		green. The output rate of a coincidence trigger requiring a signal the veto scintillator	
213		and the preshower scintillator, is shown in red.	33
214	3.4	The total luminosity delivered during LHC stable beams as of July 2024 (measure-	
215		ment by ATLAS) (yellow). The total luminosity recorded by FASER (blue).	34
216	3.5	FASER's location in service tunnel TI12, 480m east of the ATLAS IP.	34
217	3.6	Schematic view of the far-forward region downstream of ATLAS and various particle	
218		trajectories as they make their way through the LHC infrastructure towards FASER.	
219		The upper panel shows the 480 metres between the IP and FASER, the beam collision	
220		axis is shown with a dotted line, and several components of the LHC, which have a	
221		large influence on the particle flux seen at FASER, are highlighted. The lower left	
222		of the Figure shows various high energy particles that can be produced at the IP.	
223		LLPs travel through the LHC infrastructure without interacting, the lower right of	
224		the figure shows LLPs arriving at FASER, 480 m after they are produced.	35
225	3.7	FASER in TI12 in January 2023, viewed from the calorimeter towards FASER ν . . .	36
226	3.8	The components of the FASER detector. The coordinate system is also shown. . . .	37
227	3.9	The four scintillator stations used in FASER.	39
228	3.10	Charge deposited in the first layer of the VetoNu scintillator in front of FASER ν in	
229		data. Using a 40 pC threshold (indicated by the dotted red line), the measured MIP	
230		detection efficiency is 99.99976(2).	41
231	3.11	The timing distribution of the top timing scintillator with a timing resolution of	
232		423.0 ± 0.5 ps.	42

233	3.12	The ratio of charge deposited in the two preshower scintillator layers for a 200 GeV	
234		π^- , a 150 GeV μ^- and a 200 GeV e^- from test beam data. Calculated in terms of	
235		the equivalent number of MIPs.	43
236	3.13	The current FASER preshower detector, January 2023.	44
237	3.14	A schematic of the current preshower detector: 50 mm graphite blocks, 20 mm plastic	
238		scintillator layers, 3.18 mm tungsten absorber.	44
239	3.15	The hit efficiency as a function of a) the applied hit threshold (in fC) and b) the	
240		applied bias voltage (in V) for the FASER silicon strip (SCT) tracker. The nominal	
241		settings are indicated as as a dashed line, and yields an average hit efficiency across	
242		the full tracker of 99.64 ± 0.10 %.	45
243	3.16	SCT barrel module inside an aluminium test-box.	46
244	3.17	A tracker plane with all eight SCT barrel modules.	46
245	3.18	Arrangement of the 4 FASER calorimeter modules in a 2×2 configuration before	
246		additional shielding and dual readout PMTs were added.	47
247	3.19	Design of the LHCb outer ECAL modules used for FASER.	48
248	3.20	A FASER calorimeter Hamamatsu R7899-20 PMT.	48
249	3.21	Dual readout upgrade for the calorimeter PMTs in YETS 2023. PMT 1 has a “low”	
250		energy range of 0.1 to 300 GeV. PMT 2 has a “high” energy range of 3 to 3000 GeV.	
251		The region of overlap is useful for cross calibrations.	49
252	3.22	A diagram of the FASER TDAQ architecture showing the underground and surface	
253		elements. The number in brackets is the number of channels used for readout.	50
254	3.23	FASER recorded trigger rate for individual items and total recorded rate (black)	
255		for LHC Fill 8143 on 19th August 2022. Trigger items: timing scintillator (green),	
256		signal in any veto or preshower scintillators (orange), coincidence trigger between	
257		FASER ν veto and preshower (red), calorimeter (blue).	51
258	3.24	DAQ electronics in TI12, January 2023.	52

259	4.1	An event display showing a collision event of a muon traversing the FASER detector. The measured track momentum is 21.9 GeV. The waveforms are shown for signals in scintillator counters and calorimeter modules and are fitted using a Crystal Ball function. All PMT waveforms are consistent with a muon passing through the scintillators and one of the calorimeter modules. The event has been triggered by modules in the VetoNu scintillator station, veto scintillator station and timing scintillator station with pulses above 25 mV, and by modules in the preshower station with pulses above above 3 mV. The detected hits in the SCT modules are shown with blue lines and the reconstructed track is shown with a red line. In the title of the waveform plots, left and right is defined facing the downstream direction.	55
260			
261			
262			
263			
264			
265			
266			
267			
268			
269	4.2	An example of a typical PMT raw waveform signal coming from the digitiser. Waveforms have a window of 1200 ns, with 2 ns bins and a negative amplitude of ADC counts.	56
270			
271			
272	4.3	(a) The distribution of ADC counts for a PMT waveform (b) A Gaussian fit of the zoomed in ADC histogram range.	57
273			
274	4.4	(a) An example of a typical PMT raw waveform signal coming from the digitiser. Waveforms have a window of 1200 ns, with 2 ns bins and a negative amplitude of ADC counts. (b) An example of a saturated waveform pulse.	57
275			
276			
277	4.5	An example of a reconstructed waveform in the bottom right ECAL module.	58
278	4.6	The energy loss for positive muons according to the Bethe-Bloch formula (shown between the second and third grey band. The rest of the plot shows other models). .	59
279			
280	4.7	Fitted MC distribution for (a) a 100 GeV electron fitted with a function (b) a 100 GeV muon fitted with a Landau distribution simulated in FASER's ECAL	61
281			
282	4.8	Non-uniformity in calorimeter response across the ECAL cell for (a) a 50 GeV electron in LHCb data (b) a 200 GeV electron in FASER data. The dashed blue line on the LHCb plot shows the centre of the ECAL cell, the solid blue lines indicate the edges. The FASER plot shows data collected from two areas of the ECAL cell: away from the WLS fibres (green) and close to the WLS fibres (red), showing the position-dependent response, in addition to the change in response at the cell edge. .	62
283			
284			
285			
286			
287			

288	4.9	Simulation of the (a) energy response and (b) energy resolution of electrons in the	
289		outer ECAL module LHCb test beam	64
290	4.10	The simulated energy resolution of electrons in FASER's ECAL (red) compared to	
291		a parameterisation of LHCb test beam results (green).	64
292	5.1	The distribution of (a) π^0 mesons and (b) B^0 mesons in the forward (θ, p) plane.	
293		Where θ is the angle with respect to beam axis and p is the meson's momentum.	
294		The predicted spectra is obtained assuming 14 TeV pp collision energy. The angular	
295		acceptance of FASER is indicated.	70
296	5.2	Predictions for the production of B -mesons with POWHEG+Pythia prescription	
297		used for the ALP signal MC (NLO+NLL PDF + P8), compared to the POWHEG+HERWIG	
298		and LHCb data. The blue band shows the large scale uncertainties.	71
299	5.3	The predicted energy distribution of (a) electron neutrinos and (b) muon neutri-	
300		nos for an integrated luminosity of 250 fb^{-1} . The component from light (charm)	
301		hadron decays is shown in red (blue). The shaded regions show the corresponding	
302		uncertainties associated with the flux.	73
303	5.4	(a) The p -value can be visualised as the integral of a PDF from the observed value	
304		to the end of the probability density function. This is shown in Figure 5.4a. (b) The	
305		relation between the p -value and significance Z	77
306	5.5	The fit configuration and setup of the signal region, samples and systematics used	
307		in the model-dependent fit in the ALP-W search.	79
308	6.1	Reconstructed good tracks normalised by the corresponding luminosity for the runs	
309		used in this analysis. A good track is defined as having a momentum of at least 20	
310		GeV, a χ^2/NDF of at least 25 and at least 12 hits on track within a 95 mm radius	
311		once extrapolated back to the scintillator station.	81
312	6.2	Reconstructed events normalised by the corresponding luminosity for the runs used	
313		in this analysis. Plot shows the total yield of events with calorimeter energy greater	
314		than 100 GeV.	82

315	6.3	Dark photon MC signal points spanning the 2D parameter space as a function of	
316		dark photon mass and coupling. Included are existing constraints from previous	
317		experiments (grey) and projected sensitivity of future experiments (dashed lines).	
318		In yellow is the predicted FASER reach assuming various benchmark amounts of	
319		recorded luminosity.	82
320	6.4	A typical dark photon (A') signal event traversing FASER. The neutral A' (dotted	
321		line) enters the detector from the left and deposits no charge in any of the veto	
322		scintillator stations. It decays within FASER's decay volume to a highly-energetic	
323		e^+e^- pair (dashed lines) which leave charge deposits in the timing scintillator, as well	
324		as two tracks within the tracking spectrometer. Energy deposits in the preshower	
325		and calorimeter are consistent with an EM shower.	83
326	6.5	Charge deposited in the timing scintillator in data (black), populated mainly by	
327		muon events, compared to a representative dark photon MC signal sample (green).	
328		The dotted line indicates the 70 pC charge selection used in this analysis.	84
329	6.6	The calorimeter EM energy distribution of the GENIE neutrino MC sample after the	
330		signal region selections have been applied. The dashed line indicates the calorimeter	
331		energy requirement above 500 GeV, above this point there are 1.5×10^{-3} expected	
332		neutrino events.	86
333	6.7	The ABCD background estimation method showing the control regions, validation	
334		regions and signal regions used to validate the large-angle muon estimate in the dark	
335		photon analysis.	91
336	6.8	The calorimeter energy distribution of cosmic muon events with various track re-	
337		quirements. Few events survive the veto scintillator selection. No events survive the	
338		requirement of at least one good track.	94
339	6.9	The calorimeter energy distribution of beam 1 background events with various track	
340		requirements. Few events survive the veto scintillator selection. No events survive	
341		the requirement of at least one good track.	95

342	6.10	The energy spectrum of a dark photon signal with mass 50 MeV and coupling $\epsilon =$	
343		3×10^{-5} produced in meson decays whose production is modelled by the EPOS-	
344		LHC (blue), QGSJET (orange) and SIBYLL (green) generators. The production	
345		due to bremsstrahlung is shown in grey, with a factor of two variation in the p_T	
346		cutoff. The bottom panel shows the ratio of the different generator estimates with	
347		the parameterisation of the uncertainty as a function of signal energy.	97
348	6.11	(a) The E/p distribution for photon conversion events with $75 \text{ GeV} < p < 175 \text{ GeV}$	
349		for data and FLUKA MC. (b) The fitted E/p peak values for various momentum	
350		ranges: $20 \text{ GeV} < p < 30 \text{ GeV}$, $35 \text{ GeV} < p < 75 \text{ GeV}$, $75 \text{ GeV} < p < 125 \text{ GeV}$,	
351		$125 \text{ GeV} < p < 175 \text{ GeV}$. The E/p ratio is centred around one, and the agreement	
352		between data and MC is well within the 6.06% uncertainty across the momentum	
353		range.	99
354	6.12	Top panel: The two track reconstruction efficiency as a function of track separation	
355		for single, overlaid tracks in both data and FLUKA MC. Shown in red is the track	
356		separation of e^+e^- tracks in a representative A' signal sample. Bottom panel: The	
357		ratio of the reconstruction efficiency of these overlaid events in data and MC.	100
358	6.13	Calorimeter EM energy distributions showing three representative A' signal samples	
359		with (a) all data events with at least one good track (b) data events with at least one	
360		good track which also survive the veto scintillator selections outlined in the selection.	103
361	6.14	Calorimeter EM energy distributions showing three representative A' signal samples	
362		showing data events with 2 good tracks that pass all the signal selections. Zero	
363		events survive these requirements.	103
364	6.15	Interpretation of the signal region yield as A' exclusion limits with the assumption	
365		of 2×10^{-3} background events and zero data events. The expected limit with 90%	
366		CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is	
367		shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey. The thermal relic	
368		density target is shown in red.	104
369	6.16	Interpretation of the signal region yield as $B - L$ gauge boson exclusion limits. The	
370		expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and green uncertainty band.	
371		The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.	105

372	7.1	Calorimeter trigger efficiency in 2022 vs 2023 data. The calo turn-on curve vs total energy for a large run in 2022 (red) and 2023 (blue).	107
373			
374	7.2	Reconstructed events per unit luminosity that pass data quality requirements in the 2022 dataset. Plot shows the total yield of events with calorimeter energy greater than 100 GeV. The large error band seen in run 8752 is due to low statistics for this run (10.3 pb ⁻¹ recorded).	108
375			
376			
377			
378	7.3	Reconstructed events per unit luminosity that pass data quality requirements in the 2023 dataset. Plot shows the total yield of events with calorimeter energy greater than 100 GeV.	108
379			
380			
381	7.4	ALP-W signal points generated across the parameter space that FASER is sensitive to. Previous limits set by existing experiments are indicated in grey. The projected expected limits in red and blue were produced for 27 fb ⁻¹ , which is equivalent to the dataset used in the dark photon analysis, and 60 fb ⁻¹ , which was the initial prediction for the combined 2022 and 2023 dataset used in the ALP search, and close to the final 57.7 fb ⁻¹ that was recorded. These projections are shown for a zero-background case with a 500 GeV calorimeter energy selection. This is not the case for this analysis, which has a non-zero background expectation and applies a stricter calorimeter energy requirement.	110
382			
383			
384			
385			
386			
387			
388			
389			
390	7.5	A typical ALP signal event traversing FASER. The neutral ALP (dotted line) enters the detector from the left and deposits no charge in any of the veto scintillator stations. It decays within FASER's decay volume to two highly energetic photons (dashed lines) which also do not leave any charge deposits in the timing scintillator. However, energy deposits will be seen in both preshower layers and in the calorimeter, as the EM shower develops.	111
391			
392			
393			
394			
395			
396	7.6	Charge deposited in the top timing scintillator layer. Comparison between data (black) and a representative ALP signal point (blue) with mass 200 GeV and coupling 1×10^{-4} . Shown for (a) the 2022 dataset and (b) the 2023 dataset.	113
397			
398			
399	7.7	Calorimeter EM energy distributions for ALP signal models with (a) $m_a = 100$ MeV (b) $m_a = 200$ MeV for a range of different couplings. The calorimeter EM energy threshold of 1.5 TeV is indicated by the dashed line.	113
400			
401			

402	7.8	Significance studies on initial ALP-W signal sample. The significance of selections on the calorimeter EM energy (left) assuming 100% (red), 50% (blue) and 20% (green) background uncertainty. For two different ALP MC samples.	115
403			
404			
405	7.9	Distributions in r - z of the neutrino interaction vertex (blue/red) and ALP decay vertex (yellow) within the FASER detector with (a) calorimeter energy above 100 GeV (b) calorimeter energy above 100 GeV and preshower ratio > 4.5	116
406			
407			
408	7.10	Plot showing the magnet region, calorimeter region and preshower region. The three different regions for targeting neutrino interactions, in the plane of the preshower layer 1 and preshower ratio cuts. The preshower region becomes the signal region for this analysis at high calorimeter energies.	117
409			
410			
411			
412	7.11	The calorimeter energy distribution for the MC neutrino background and a representative ALP signal in the magnet region. The ALP signal has mass 120 GeV and coupling $1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux. (a) shows the neutrino background in terms of light and charm components, (b) shows in terms of electron and muon neutrinos. The green dashed line indicates the region that was unblinded at the beginning of the unblinding procedure.	118
413			
414			
415			
416			
417			
418			
419	7.12	The calorimeter energy distribution for the MC neutrino background and a representative ALP signal in the calorimeter region. The ALP signal has mass 120 GeV and coupling $1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux. (a) shows the neutrino background in terms of light and charm components, (b) shows in terms of electron and muon neutrinos. The green dashed line indicates the region that was unblinded at the beginning of the unblinding procedure.	118
420			
421			
422			
423			
424			
425			

426	7.13	The calorimeter energy distribution for the MC neutrino background and a representative ALP signal in the preshower region. The ALP signal has mass 120 GeV and coupling $1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux. (a) shows the neutrino background in terms of light and charm components, (b) shows in terms of electron and muon neutrinos. The green dashed line indicates the region that was unblinded at the beginning of the unblinding procedure. The preshower region becomes the signal region for this analysis at high calorimeter energy.	119
434	7.14	The preshower ratio distribution of the neutrino background MC in (a) the magnet region and (b) the calorimeter region. The neutrino background is shown in terms of light and charm components. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux.	120
438	7.15	The preshower layer 1 nMIP distribution of the neutrino background MC in (a) the magnet region and (b) the calorimeter region. The neutrino background is shown in terms of light and charm components. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux.	120
442	7.16	Number of MIPs in the second preshower layer against calorimeter energy for electron neutrinos (red) and muon neutrinos (blue) as well as a representative ALP signal (yellow). The neutrinos are categorised in terms of their interaction vertex: (a) neutrinos interacting in the magnet, (b) neutrinos interacting in the calorimeter, (c) neutrinos interacting in the preshower. The green dashed line shows the cut used in this analysis: preshower layer 1 > 10 MIPs.	121
448	7.17	Preshower ratio against calorimeter energy for electron neutrinos (red) and muon neutrinos (blue) as well as a representative ALP signal (yellow). The neutrinos are categorised in terms of their interaction vertex: (a) neutrinos interacting in the magnet, (b) neutrinos interacting in the calorimeter, (c) neutrinos interacting in the preshower. The green dashed line shows the cut used in this analysis: preshower ratio > 4.5	122

454	7.18	The first ABCD configuration considered to target large-angle muons. Using an	
455		inversion of the timing scintillator charge selection used in this analysis, and the	
456		calorimeter energy. The unblinded regions are indicated in pink. The regions where	
457		the timing charge requirement is inverted are indicated by the dashed blue lines to	
458		show where large-angle muons would be expected to populate data.	126
459	7.19	ABCD configuration of the two configurations considered to target muons. Using an	
460		inversion of the veto scintillator charge cut used in this analysis, and the calorimeter	
461		energy as the ABCD variables. The regions where the veto charge requirement is	
462		inverted are highlighted in blue to show where forward-going muons are expected to	
463		populate data.	130
464	7.20	Timing in the calorimeter of beam 1 background events (red) and collision events	
465		(red). A cut at -5 ns removes all components of beam 1 background.	133
466	7.21	(a) Photon conversion in TI12 data and MC. A correction factor for the preshower	
467		variables is derived based on the difference between the two. (b) The difference in	
468		test beam data and 100 GeV electron MC in the geometry description matching that	
469		used to generate the ALP signal, used to estimate the uncertainty assigned to the	
470		preshower variables.	137
471	7.22	The agreement between data and MC measured as a function of momentum in	
472		studies of photon conversion events, resulting in correction factors for the preshower	
473		variables to be applied in MC for (a) PS1 nMIP (1.20) and (b) PS Ratio (1.13). . . .	137
474	7.23	Calorimeter EM energy distributions in the preshower and signal regions, showing	
475		the composition of the neutrino background expectation separated (a) in terms of	
476		neutrino type and (b) in terms of light/charm production. The final energy bin above	
477		1.5 TeV shows the signal region and is indicated by the green arrow.	143
478	7.24	Interpretation of the signal region yield as ALP exclusion limits with the assumption	
479		of 0.44 neutrino background events. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by	
480		the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the	
481		blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.	144

482	7.25	An event display of the data event seen in the ALP analysis. Run 8834, eventID	
483		44421456. This event is in time with a collision event and shows signal in the timing	
484		scintillator, second preshower layer and the bottom right calorimeter module.	145
485	7.26	Reconstructed PMT waveworms from ALPtrino event (Run 8834, eventID 44421456)	
486		in: (a) the top layer of the timing scintillator with a peak of 12.9 mV and an	
487		integrated charge of 1.9 pC. (b) the second preshower scintillator layer with a peak	
488		of 171.1 mV and an integrated charge of 74.5 pC. (c) the bottom right calorimeter	
489		module with a peak of 970.4 mV and an integrated charge of 364.3 pC.	146
490	7.27	Interpretation of the signal region yield as ALP exclusion limits with the assumption	
491		of 0.44 neutrino background events. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by	
492		the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the	
493		blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.	147
494	7.28	Interpretation of the signal region yield as ALP exclusion limits with the assumption	
495		of 0.44 neutrino background events. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by	
496		the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the	
497		blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.	148
498	7.29	Interpretation of the signal region yield as $U(1)B$ gauge boson exclusion limits. The	
499		expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty	
500		band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown	
501		in grey. Certain models require the introduction of new, heavier fields which can	
502		have phenomenological implications, constraints using such models are indicated by	
503		the blue dashed line.	149
504	7.30	Interpretation of the signal region yield as up-philic exclusion limits. The expected	
505		limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The	
506		observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey. . . .	149
507	7.31	Interpretation of the signal region yield as Type-I two-Higgs doublet exclusion limits.	
508		The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty	
509		band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown	
510		in grey.	150

511	7.32	Interpretation of the signal region yield as dark photon exclusion limits. The ex-	
512		pected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band.	
513		The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey,	
514		including FASER's previous results.	150
515	8.1	A photograph of the test beam setup in Experimental Hall North (EHN1) at CERN	152
516	8.2	A diagram of the components used in the test beam. The coordinate system is also	
517		shown.	152
518	8.3	The different scan point positions used in the test beam. Scan point 8 represents the	
519		centre of the top middle ECAL module.	153
520	8.4	An event display showing the simulated hits of a 100 GeV electron in the test beam	
521		MC geometry	155
522	8.5	The calibrated EM energy in the calorimeter of MC simulation compared to test	
523		beam response of each of the six ECAL modules.	155
524	8.6	The simulated calorimeter energy resolution in (a) the original test beam MC and (b)	
525		the updated test beam MC that includes the most up-to-date material description	
526		and implementation of the studied local effects in the calorimeter. Compared with	
527		parameterisation of LHCb test beam results in green.	156
528	8.7	The energy deposited in the calorimeter modules vs the preshower scintillator layers	
529		in test beam simulation (100 GeV electron).	157
530	8.8	The effect of the preshower correction on the charge deposited by a 100 GeV electron	
531		in test beam data. The preshower corrected charge (red) shows a reduced and	
532		improved energy resolution.	158
533	8.9	Calorimeter energy resolution measurement in test beam data (blue) and simulation	
534		(red), compared to a parameterisation of LHCb test beam results.	158

535	8.10 (a) One of the 6 preshower planes with 12 modules mounted on a 20×20 cm ² , 5 mm	
536	thick cooling plate. The overlap along the long edges of the modules minimises the	
537	dead area of the chips. (b) CAD diagram of the components that make up each	
538	preshower module. Each module contains 6 ASICs attached to an aluminium base	
539	plate. The thermal interface sheet ingrates the module with the cooling plate. The	
540	module flex contains the electrical interconnection to an external patch panel and	
541	SMD components (Surface Mount Devices).	160
542	8.11 An example of one of the ASIC chips, the structure of the super-columns and 13	
543	super pixels are indicated in blue, with a diagram of a single SP on the right-hand	
544	side, pads run along the bottom of the chip for probing (red).	161
545	8.12 (a) FASER pre-production probe card used to probe the pre-production chips. (b)	
546	Marks from the probe card needles left on the pre-production chip pads after estab-	
547	lishing a good contact.	162
548	8.13 LV test to configure pre-production chip. In blue is the LV current I_0 , in orange is	
549	the threshold current I_{thr} and green is the current pulled by the FPGA.	163
550	8.14 HV test to characterise pre-production chip	163
551	8.15 A wafer containing multiple chips being loaded into the probe station.	164
552	8.16 Oscilloscope reading of injected test pulse showing a single, unmasked pixel.	164
553	8.17 The predicted physics reach with the upgraded preshower detector in the ALP-W	
554	parameter space.	165
555	A.1 The change in energy loss in the calorimeter due to the implementation of (a) Birks'	
556	Law correction (red) and (b) non-uniformity correction (blue). The green represents	
557	the simulation setup without the correction, FTFP BERT ATL refers to the physics	
558	list used in the simulation.	168
559	A.2 The change in fraction of deposited energy due to the addition of Tyvek paper into	
560	the ECAL simulation, compared to the setup without Tyvek (black). Two different	
561	Tyvek densities were investigated 0.95 g/cm ³ (red) and 2.265 g/cm ³ (green).	168

562	A.3	The average of the calibrated energies of each of the six test beam calorimeter mod-	
563		ules as a function of beam energy in data and MC. The average linear fit in each	
564		case shows the extrapolation process to higher energy (500 GeV) to evaluate the	
565		uncertainty at this point. The fits results in a difference of 2.46% at 500 GeV.	170
566	B.1	(a) Number of clusters and (b) Number of spacepoints in 7 ALP-W MC signal sam-	
567		ples compared with GENIE neutrino MC. Histograms represent the signal samples,	
568		the blue markers show the neutrino MC.	172
569	B.2	Number of track segments in 7 ALP-W MC signal samples compared with GENIE	
570		neutrino MC. Histograms represent the signal samples, the blue markers show the	
571		neutrino MC.	172

List of Tables

572

573	2.1	An overview of the three generations of fermions and bosons that make up the	
574		Standard Model of particle physics.	5
575	3.1	The independent efficiencies of each of the five veto scintillators using the 2022	
576		dataset. Veto layer 0 belongs to the first module of the veto scintillator station, veto	
577		layers 1 and 2 belong to the second module of the veto scintillator station.	41
578	3.2	The definitions of the eight trigger outputs used in FASER.	51
579	3.3	Trigger items that combine the eight trigger outputs.	51
580	4.1	Descriptions of the different steps used in the reconstruction of full tracks within	
581		FASER’s tracking spectrometer.	54
582	6.1	MC cutflow for representative dark photon signal points with mass 25.1 MeV and	
583		coupling $\epsilon = 3 \times 10^{-5}$ and mass 50.1 MeV and coupling $\epsilon = 1 \times 10^{-5}$, showing	
584		number of signal events entering and passing each selection, along with the efficiency	
585		of that selection and the cumulative efficiency to that point. The signal yield is	
586		scaled for 27.0 fb^{-1}	85
587	6.2	Summary of the MC estimate for the neutrino background for 27.0 fb^{-1} in the signal	
588		region. Included are uncertainties from flux variations, and those derived from MC	
589		statistics, respectively.	87
590	6.3	Summary of the neutral hadron estimate method targeting two and three-track events.	88
591	6.4	Cutflow for large-angle muon background in the case of a veto signal (top) and no	
592		veto signal (bottom).	89

593	6.5	Event yields in the various regions. Note: number of events as found using a 30 pC window for a single track.	92
594			
595	6.6	Calculations and predictions for intermediate validation regions and for the final signal regions. In the former case, various ranges are used as test. For the SR, only the integrated 10-500 GeV region is used for the predictions. The uncertainty in 100% due to the Veto region in the range 100-500 GeV having only 1 event. Post-unblinding: in bold, the observed events (0) in both validation and signal regions.	93
596			
597			
598			
599			
600			
601	6.7	Summary of the different sources of background considered in this analysis and the total estimate, with uncertainty.	95
602			
603	6.8	Summary of the track scale, and resolution variations in MC and compared to data.	101
604	6.9	Summary of the various sources of signal uncertainty, the size of the uncertainty and the range of the effect of this uncertainty on the signal yield across the parameter space. For the latter, the numbers in parenthesis indicate the effect on signals in the new exclusion reach with this analysis. The error on the MC statistics is calculated using the standard deviation of the sum of the weights (W) of each sample. The systematic uncertainty is dominated by the uncertainty on the signal generators. . .	102
605			
606			
607			
608			
609			
610	7.1	Requirements on data to target physics events and ensure good quality data.	109
611	7.2	Event selection for the ALPs analysis.	114
612	7.3	MC cutflow for representative ALP-W signal points with mass 120 MeV and coupling $g_{aWW} = 3 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ and mass 100 MeV and coupling $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$, showing number of signal events entering and passing each selection, along with the efficiency and the cumulative efficiency to that point. The signal yield is scaled for 57.7 fb^{-1}	114
613			
614			
615			
616			
617	7.4	Cutflow for the neutrino background MC prediction. The background yield is scaled for 57.7 fb^{-1}	114
618			

619	7.5	Neutrino MC predictions in the calorimeter, magnet and preshower validation re-	
620		gions compared to data. Broken down in terms of neutrino flavour and with the	
621		uncertainties from flux variations, experimental uncertainties associated with the	
622		preshower and calorimeter cuts, and those derived from MC statistics, respectively. .	123
623	7.6	Summary of the MC estimate for the neutrino background for 57.7 fb^{-1} in the signal	
624		region. Included are uncertainties from flux variations, experimental uncertainties	
625		associated with the preshower and calorimeter, and those derived from MC statistics,	
626		respectively.	124
627	7.7	MC cutflow for FLUKA muon sample.	125
628	7.8	MC cutflow specifically for studying ALP large-angle muon background.	125
629	7.9	The events in ABCD regions defined above, after baseline cuts. The central MC	
630		neutrino estimate in the different regions is subtracted from data events to give a	
631		picture of the component of large-angle muons captured by this method. In bold	
632		is the negative large-angle muon estimate which proves this method unsuitable for	
633		targeting this background.	127
634	7.10	The events in ABCD regions defined above, after baseline cuts and the preshower	
635		cuts used in this analysis (PS ratio > 4.5 , PS1 nMIP > 10). The central MC neutrino	
636		estimate in the different regions is subtracted from data events to give a picture of	
637		the component of large-angle muons captured by this method. In bold is the negative	
638		large-angle muon estimates which proves this method unsuitable for targeting this	
639		background.	127
640	7.11	Data and neutrino yields in the different ABCD regions and the prediction for the	
641		large-angle muon estimate for the two preshower selections. To calculate the predic-	
642		tion in region A, the expected MC neutrino background is first subtracted from the	
643		data in region C. The uncertainty on the neutrino MC includes flux and experimental	
644		sources and is propagated to the final estimate.	130
645	7.12	Final estimates of the large-angle muon background in the two configurations.	130
646	7.13	Cutflow of events passing selections for the evaluation of cosmic ray background. . .	131
647	7.14	Summary of events passing selections and calorimeter timing requirement for the	
648		evaluation of beam 1 background.	132

649	7.15	Summary of the different sources of background considered in this analysis and the total estimate, with uncertainty.	133
650			
651	7.16	The percentage change in yield up and down due to systematic uncertainty on generator type. Uncertainty from each generator are added in quadrature, including the additional 20% uncertainty arising from modeling of B hadrons in the ALP-W model.	135
652			
653			
654	7.17	The percentage change in yield up and down due to systematic uncertainty on PS1 nMIP. A correction factor of 1.20 is applied, with an uncertainty of 20%.	138
655			
656	7.18	The percentage change in yield up and down due to systematic uncertainty on the PS Ratio (preshower1/preshower0). A correction factor of 1.13 was applied, with an uncertainty of 13%.	139
657			
658			
659	7.19	The percentage change in yield for representative signal MC samples in the case of the 6% calorimeter energy systematic uncertainty implemented in this analysis. . . .	141
660			
661	7.20	An investigation into the percentage change in signal yield for representative signal MC samples with 10% and 20% calorimeter energy systematic uncertainty.	142
662			
663	7.21	Summary of the various sources of signal uncertainty, the effect of this uncertainty on the signal yield across the parameter space is shown. Numbers in parenthesis indicate the effect on signals in the new exclusion reach with this analysis. The error on the MC statistics is calculated using the standard deviation of the sum of the weights (W) of each sample.	142
664			
665			
666			
667			
668	7.22	Systematic uncertainties implemented in the statistical analysis framework.	143
669	A.1	Summary and description of each of the sources of uncertainty on the calorimeter energy threshold, leading to a total uncertainty of 6.06%.	169
670			

Chapter 1

Introduction

This thesis¹ introduces the Forward Search Experiment (FASER) and its role in searches for physics beyond the Standard Model, specifically searching for long-lived particles produced in the far-forward region at the ATLAS Interaction Point at the LHC.

With the exception of gravity, the Standard Model (SM) of particle physics provides a consistent description of the natural world. However, it is unable to address several key questions raised about the possibility of physics beyond the Standard Model (BSM). One of the strongest pieces of evidence for BSM physics is dark matter (DM) which dominates the matter density in the universe. Its existence could also imply the existence of a dark or hidden sector that mirrors the complexities of the Standard Model of ordinary matter. The two models explored in this work are dark photons A' with coupling to the SM photon, and axion-like particles (ALPs) a with various couplings to SM particles.

The structure of this thesis is as follows: Chapter 2 outlines the current understanding of particle physics and defines the Lagrangian of each of the models discussed. The motivations for searching for dark matter are explored. Theory surrounding the dark photon model is described, in addition to the production and decay modes that are relevant to the parameter space probed with this model. The same is described for the three axion-like particle models discussed: ALPs with coupling to the $SU(2)_L$ gauge boson, ALPs with coupling to photons and ALPs coupling to gluons.

Following this is a brief introduction to the LHC and an in-depth description of the components

¹The convention $\hbar = c = 1$ is used throughout this thesis

692 of the FASER detector. Also included in this chapter is a description of FASER’s trigger system
693 and data acquisition.

694 There is a chapter introducing the process of event and object reconstruction, with specific focus
695 on calorimetry. The study of the energy response and resolution of the EM calorimeter (ECAL)
696 has been a large focus of the author’s work, specifically with respect to implementing the Monte
697 Carlo (MC) simulation of the ECAL. Chapter 5 details the MC simulations used in the analyses
698 discussed in this thesis, it also describes the framework used in the statistical interpretation of the
699 results presented.

700 This is followed by an analysis chapter describing the search for dark photons. This analysis uses
701 Run 3 data at a centre of mass energy of $\sqrt{s} = 13.6$ TeV corresponding to an integrated luminosity
702 of 27.0 fb^{-1} collected by the FASER experiment in 2022. The search sets world-leading exclusion
703 limits for dark photons with masses $17 \text{ MeV} < m_{A'} < 70 \text{ MeV}$ and couplings $2 \times 10^{-5} < \epsilon <$
704 1×10^{-4} . Reinterpretation of these results for the $B - L$ gauge boson is also presented. In this
705 analysis, the author contributed to estimation of the SM background processes, validation of these
706 estimates using data-driven techniques and the estimate of the systematic uncertainties associated
707 with the calorimeter.

708 A second analysis chapter describes the search for axion-like particles. This analysis also uses
709 Run 3 data, corresponding to an integrated luminosity of 57.7 fb^{-1} collected by the FASER ex-
710 periment in 2022 and 2023. This search sets world-leading exclusion limits for ALPs with masses
711 $100 < m_a < 250 \text{ MeV}$ and couplings $3 \times 10^{-5} < g_{aWW} < 5 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$. The exclusion limits
712 for ALPs coupling to photons and ALPs coupling to gluons are also presented, in addition to fur-
713 ther reinterpretation with the $U(1)B$ gauge boson model, the up-philic scalar model, the Type-I
714 two Higgs doublet model, and the dark photon model. The author led analysis efforts, covering
715 numerous aspects including the definition and optimisation of the signal selection, the estimation
716 of the SM background using both MC and data-driven approaches, the estimation of signal sys-
717 tematic uncertainties related to the MC generation, the estimation of the experimental systematic
718 uncertainties related to the calorimeter, and the statistical interpretation of the final results.

719 The final chapter before the conclusion describes the 2021 FASER calorimeter test beam and the
720 hardware tests performed in preparation for the preshower detector upgrade in 2024. The author
721 had direct involvement in both of these campaigns; the author generated the initial MC samples

722 used in analysis of the test beam data and had significant involvement in the pre-production and
723 production level tests of the chips used in the high-precision W-Si preshower detector upgrade. The
724 implications of this detector upgrade on future ALP searches is also explored.

Chapter 2

Theoretical Overview

This chapter details the theoretical motivation for searching for long-lived particles (LLPs) with FASER, specifically dark photons and axion-like particles (ALPs). It provides an overview of the Standard Model of particle physics (SM), shortcomings that contribute towards the motivation for a search for dark matter and details of the particular models that are targeted in the analyses discussed in this thesis.

2.1 The Standard Model of Particle Physics

The Standard Model provides an elegant description of all known elementary particles and their interactions. It has been extremely successful in describing experimental measurements in high energy particle physics [3] and describes three of the four fundamental forces: the weak force, the strong force, and electromagnetism. An overview of the structure of the SM is given in Table 2.1; the information presented is taken from Ref. [4] with the exception of the upper limit given on the mass of the electron neutrino, which is taken from Ref. [5]. The SM is made up of: fermions, particles of half-integer spin that obey Fermi-Dirac statistics, and bosons, particles with integer spin that obey Bose-Einstein statistics. The fermions can be divided into two categories: quarks and leptons. The bosons can be divided into gauge bosons, with spin 1, and scalar bosons, with spin 0.

There are three “generations” within the SM, into which the 6 quarks and 6 leptons are arranged. The gauge bosons: W and Z bosons, the photon and the gluon are the vector bosons responsible for

Table 2.1: An overview of the three generations of fermions and bosons that make up the Standard Model of particle physics.

The Standard Model					
Fermions					
Generation	Name	Symbol	Charge (e)	Spin	Mass
I	Up quark	u	$+\frac{2}{3}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	2.2 MeV
	Down quark	d	$-\frac{1}{3}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	4.7 MeV
	Electron	e	-1	$\frac{1}{2}$	0.511 MeV
	Electron neutrino	ν_e	0	$\frac{1}{2}$	<0.8 eV
II	Charm quark	c	$+\frac{2}{3}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	1.275 GeV
	Strange quark	s	$-\frac{1}{3}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	95 MeV
	Muon	μ	-1	$\frac{1}{2}$	105.7 MeV
	Muon neutrino	ν_μ	0	$\frac{1}{2}$	<0.19 MeV
III	Top quark	t	$+\frac{2}{3}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	173 GeV
	Bottom quark	b	$-\frac{1}{3}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	4.18 GeV
	Tau	τ	-1	$\frac{1}{2}$	1.78 GeV
	Tau neutrino	ν_τ	0	$\frac{1}{2}$	<18.2 MeV
Bosons					
Force	Name	Symbol	Charge (e)	Spin	Mass
Electromagnetic	Photon	γ	0	1	0
Strong	Gluon	g	0	1	0
Weak	W^+	W^+	+1	1	80.4 GeV
	W^-	W^-	-1	1	80.4 GeV
	Z	Z^0	0	1	91.2 GeV
-	Higgs	h	0	0	125.2 GeV

745 the weak, electromagnetic, and strong interactions, respectively. There is also, of course, the Higgs
746 boson [6, 7], a scalar boson that, via the spontaneous electroweak symmetry breaking (EWSB) of
747 the Higgs field, gives mass to the fundamental fermions and the W and Z bosons [8]. This process
748 is known as the Higgs mechanism.

749 Leptons experience three of the fundamental interactions: the weak interaction, electromag-
750 netism and gravity. The three types are: electron e , muon μ , and tau τ ; the muon and tau leptons
751 are unstable particles which decay to lighter particles via the weak interaction. The neutrinos,
752 which come in these three flavours, are also classed as leptons, although their properties are very
753 different. Neutrinos are stable and do not decay, instead neutrino oscillation is observed in which a
754 neutrino changes “type”; the assignment of a particular neutrino flavour is due to a superposition

755 of the three neutrino generations. Neutrinos interact very rarely and are considered nearly massless
756 [9].

757 Quarks are the only particles in the SM to experience all four fundamental forces, they carry
758 colour charge which allows them to experience the strong interaction. Quarks also carry a flavour:
759 up, down, charm, strange, top or bottom. Quarks are confined within hadrons, a particle class that
760 includes mesons and baryons. Mesons consist of a quark-antiquark pair, for example, the pion π .
761 The π^+ meson is made up of an up and an anti-down quark $u\bar{d}$, its antiparticle, the π^- meson, is
762 made up of an anti-up quark and a down quark $\bar{u}d$. The neutral pion, the π^0 meson, is considered
763 to be a combination of $u\bar{u}$ and $b\bar{b}$. Baryons consist of three quarks where “quarks” refers to both
764 the particle and its antiparticle, for example the proton is a baryon made up of uud . Free quarks
765 cannot exist in nature, at least not at the current temperature and state of our universe due to
766 colour confinement [10]: only gauge invariant objects, i.e. colourless particles can be observed.

767 2.1.1 Quantum Electrodynamics and Electroweak Unification

768 Quantum Electrodynamics (QED) is the quantum field theory of electromagnetic interactions. The
769 photon γ is the force carrier of the electromagnetic interaction. QED acts between photons and
770 electrically-charged fermions. It is an abelian gauge theory, meaning that all elements within the
771 group are commutable, described by the symmetry group $U(1)$.

772 The weak interaction is responsible for radioactive decay, its force carriers are the W^\pm and
773 Z bosons. The weak force is the only fundamental force to break CP symmetry [11]. Unification
774 between electromagnetism and the weak interaction results in a $SU(2)_L \times U(1)_Y$ group. The $SU(2)_L$
775 group has three associated gauge fields: $W_\mu^{(1)}$, $W_\mu^{(2)}$ and $W_\mu^{(3)}$, the $U(1)_Y$ group has a neutral gauge
776 field B_μ which couples to hypercharge Y . The W bosons can be written as a combination of $W_\mu^{(1)}$
777 and $W_\mu^{(2)}$:

$$W^\pm = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(W_\mu^{(1)} \mp W_\mu^{(2)}). \quad (2.1)$$

778 The electroweak gauge bosons γ and Z are written as combinations of B_μ and $W_\mu^{(3)}$, connected
779 through the weak mixing angle θ_W [12]:

$$A_\mu = +B_\mu \cos \theta_W + W_\mu^{(3)} \sin \theta_W, \quad (2.2)$$

$$Z_\mu = -B_\mu \sin \theta_W + W_\mu^{(3)} \cos \theta_W, \quad (2.3)$$

780 where A_μ and Z_μ are the corresponding neutral fields of the photon and Z boson, respectively.

781 2.1.2 Quantum Chromodynamics

782 Quantum Chromodynamics (QCD) is the quantum field theory of strong interactions. The gluon
 783 is the force carrier for the strong interaction, which acts on quarks and gluons. Like electric charge
 784 in QED, the QCD charge carried by quarks and gluons is colour, which comes in three types: red,
 785 blue and green. There are eight gluons due to these colour combinations, corresponding to eight
 786 fields G_μ^a where $a = 1, \dots, 8$ [12].

787 The coupling strength α_s of QCD decreases logarithmically with energy; α_s is large at low
 788 energies, requiring a non-perturbative QCD description and quarks and gluons behave according
 789 to colour confinement; α_s is small at higher energy, requiring a perturbative QCD description
 790 and quarks and gluons have asymptotic freedom. At higher orders of perturbation theory, loop
 791 corrections arise leading to ultraviolet (UV) divergences, which requires the introduction of the
 792 renormalisation scale μ_R at which α_s can be calculated. QCD is a non-abelian gauge theory,
 793 meaning that gluons are able to self-interact. It has the symmetry group $SU(3)_C$ which describes
 794 rotation in colour space.

795 2.1.2.1 The Strong CP Problem

796 An unsolved puzzle in the Standard Model is the lack of CP violation in strong interactions [13],
 797 an observation that should be possible according to QCD [14]. Weak interactions are known to
 798 violate CP symmetry, but in strong interactions, which also contain a CP-violating term in their
 799 Lagrangian, this remains unobserved [15].

800 2.1.3 The Standard Model Lagrangian

801 The SM is a quantum field theory in which Lagrangian formalism is used to describe the field
 802 associated with each kind of particle. The symmetries in the SM are described by local phase
 803 transformations of the symmetry groups $SU(3)_C \times SU(2)_L \times U(1)_Y$. A compact form of the

804 Lagrangian can be written as shown in Equation 2.4.

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{L} = & -\frac{1}{4}F^{\mu\nu}F_{\mu\nu} \\
& + \bar{\Psi}(i\gamma^\mu D_\mu)\Psi + h.c. \\
& + \Psi_i y_{ij} \Psi_j \Phi + h.c. \\
& + |D_\mu \Phi|^2 - V(\Phi).
\end{aligned}
\tag{2.4}$$

805 Within this equation are the kinetic terms of the three fundamental forces described in the SM
806 that correspond to the $(SU(3)_C \times SU(2)_L \times U(1)_Y)$ gauge invariance, $\bar{\Psi}(i\gamma^\mu D_\mu)\Psi$ is the gauge
807 covariant derivative term which encompasses the interactions between the fermions and the forces
808 and expresses how fields vary based on their position within a reference frame, where Ψ is the
809 wavefunction. The remaining terms refer to the contributions to the SM from the Higgs boson
810 (Φ), $\Psi_i y_{ij} \Psi_j \Phi$ describes the Yukawa terms related to fermion masses, $|D_\mu \Phi|^2$ dictates how the
811 Higgs couples through the gauge covariant derivative to particles, $V(\Phi)$ describes the interactions
812 of the Higgs with the vacuum expectation value, and “+h.c.” refers to the addition of the Hermitian
813 conjugate. The $-\frac{1}{4}F^{\mu\nu}F_{\mu\nu}$ term is the kinetic energy term, where $F_{\mu\nu}$ can be written in terms of
814 the field tensors for the electroweak and strong force:

$$F^{\mu\nu}F_{\mu\nu} = B^{\mu\nu}B_{\mu\nu} + W^{(i)\mu\nu}W_{\mu\nu}^{(i)} + G^{a\mu\nu}G_{\mu\nu}^a. \tag{2.5}$$

815 2.2 Shortcomings of the Standard Model

816 Excluding gravity, the Standard Model provides a consistent description of all known fermionic
817 particles and their interactions up to the Planck scale $\mathcal{O}(10^{19})$ GeV [16]. However, there are several
818 physical phenomena that the SM cannot explain, pointing at the existence of physics beyond the
819 Standard Model (BSM).

820 2.2.1 Dark Matter

821 One of the strongest arguments that the SM does not yet provide a complete picture is the existence
822 of dark matter (DM) which dominates the matter density in the universe. Although the origin and

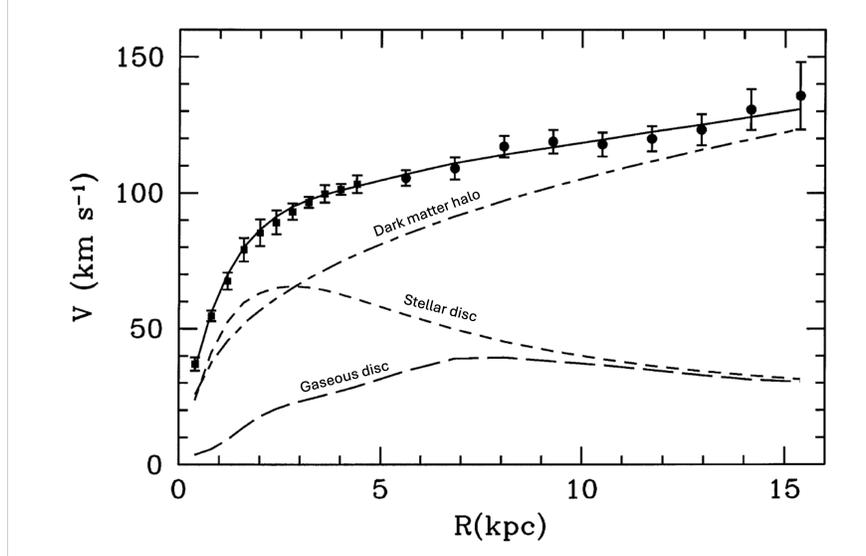


Figure 2.1: The observed galactic rotation curve (data points) for the M33 galaxy showing the contributions from the stellar disc and gaseous disc and the dark matter halo contribution needed to match the data.

823 properties of DM remain a mystery, the existence of DM in the universe is inferred from gravitational
 824 effects [17]. Measurement of the temperature fluctuations [18] of the cosmic microwave background
 825 (CMB) shows anisotropies that can be used to measure the mean density of dark matter, which is
 826 roughly five times larger than the baryonic matter density of the universe. Ordinary matter makes
 827 up only 5% of the matter in our universe, the rest falls under the umbrella of dark energy and dark
 828 matter.

829 2.2.1.1 Galactic Rotation Curves

830 The first of evidence of dark matter was the measurement of galaxy rotation curves [19] and the
 831 formation and growth of galactic halos. It has been found that the stellar rotational velocity within
 832 a galaxy remains constant, or “flat” regardless of how distant a star is from the galactic centre. This
 833 observation is not what is expected, Newton’s law of gravity demonstrates that rotational velocity
 834 of stars would decrease proportionally to the distance from the centre of the galaxy. Figure 2.1,
 835 adapted from Ref. [20], shows the observed rotational velocity curve of the M33 galaxy, compared
 836 with the best fitting model that includes the contributions from the dark matter halo, stellar disc
 837 and gaseous disc. The shape of the observed rotational velocity at higher radius motivates the idea
 838 that the galactic halo of dark matter must be contributing to these observations.



Figure 2.2: A composite image showing the galaxy cluster 1E 0657-56, regions of hot gas are shown in pink, regions where most of the mass density lies are shown in blue.

839 2.2.1.2 Gravitation Lensing

840 Gravitational lensing is the visible effect of the bending of space-time near any gravitating mass
841 [21], causing the deflection of passing light. This observation provides a potential piece of evidence
842 for gravitational dark matter, which would cause the distortion and magnification of images of
843 background galaxies.

844 2.2.1.3 Bullet Cluster

845 The most energetic event known to have occurred since the Big Bang is the formation of galaxy
846 cluster 1E 0657-56 from the collision of two large clusters of galaxies. Figure 2.2 [22] shows this
847 “Bullet Cluster”; the two pink regions are hot gas containing most of the “normal” matter. The
848 blue regions show where most of the mass of the cluster is found, this is clearly separated from
849 normal matter leading to the conclusion that the majority of the mass of the galaxy clusters comes
850 from dark matter.

851 2.2.2 Baryon Asymmetry and CP Violation

852 The matter-antimatter asymmetry problem is the apparent imbalance of baryonic and anti-baryonic
853 matter in the universe. According to assumptions made in the SM, the universe should be neutral
854 and equal amounts of matter and antimatter should have been created at the time of the Big Bang.
855 This is obviously not the case, the universe is dominated by matter. Baryon asymmetry is evident
856 in the relative size of the peaks observed in the shape of the cosmic microwave background (CMB)
857 [23].

858 CP violation is a necessary condition to prevent an equal number of left-handed and right-
859 handed baryons and anti-baryons. With the assumption of non-zero quark masses, one source of
860 CP violation is the Cabibbo-Kobayashi-Maskawa (CKM) matrix that describes quark mixing [13].
861 With the inclusion of neutrino masses, another source arises from the weak interaction in leptonic
862 mixing [24]. Even with existing sources of CP violation in the SM, the baryon asymmetry generated
863 as a result is not sufficient to explain the current levels of matter-antimatter asymmetry.

864 2.2.3 The Hierarchy Problem

865 The Planck mass, which combines the speed of light c , the Planck constant h and Newton's gravi-
866 tational constant G_N , provides the Planck scale $\mathcal{O}(10^{19})$ GeV [16]. The Hierarchy problem arises
867 in relation to the Higgs mass $m_h = 125$ GeV which lies around the weak scale ($m_W \sim 100$ GeV –1
868 TeV); one would expect the mass of the physical Higgs boson to approach that of the Planck scale,
869 this would make sense in terms of electroweak symmetry. But, as mentioned, the Higgs mechanism
870 occurs via spontaneous EWSB.

871 2.3 Motivating the Search for Dark Matter

872 DM can be framed as an unknown particle produced in the early universe [17], this modelling
873 explores the idea that DM has a weak coupling to baryonic matter, in an attempt to place the
874 question of dark matter into the context of known cosmology and particle physics [25]. Potential
875 candidates for the particle nature of DM include WIMPs, gravitinos, sterile neutrinos, asymmetric
876 dark matter, axions and hidden sector dark matter [22].

877 2.3.1 Detection Methods

878 There are three main methods to search for dark matter candidates: indirect detection, direct
879 detection and collider searches [26].

880 Indirect dark matter detection searches for the products of annihilating dark matter, often built
881 around the hypothesis that dark matter is produced as a thermal relic of the Big Bang [16]. This
882 style of search relies on the DM interacting with ordinary matter through a mediator which decays
883 to SM final states.

884 Direct dark matter detection is based on the existing gravitational evidence for dark matter.
885 This style of search relies on the DM interacting with ordinary matter through collisions with nuclei
886 [26], hoping to prove the existence of gravitational dark matter by measuring the nuclear recoil and
887 DM-nuclei scattering.

888 Searches for dark matter in high-energy collisions at particle colliders relies on the the idea of
889 missing transverse energy from electrically neutral, invisible particles and the detection of visible
890 components such as hadron jets and charged leptons [27]. This is distinct from far-forward experi-
891 ments at colliders, such as FASER at the LHC, which do not exploit the transverse plane. Collider
892 searches offer a probe to dark matter but only direct or indirect DM searches can confirm a signal
893 is dark matter, as all electrically neutral particles could produce this missing energy.

894 2.3.2 WIMPs and Thermal Relic Density

895 Weakly interacting massive particles (WIMPs) are the most well studied candidates for dark matter
896 of a particulate nature [16]. They typically have a mass in the range of the weak scale and naturally
897 have the correct relic density to serve as dark matter candidates. The thermal relic density [28] of
898 a dark matter particle χ was found from recent Planck data [29] to be:

$$\Omega_\chi h^2 \sim \frac{m_\chi^2}{g_\chi^4} h^2 \sim 0.12 \quad (2.6)$$

899 where m_χ is the mass of the dark matter particle, h here is not the Planck constant but Hubble
900 constant in units of $100 \text{ kms}^{-1}\text{Mpc}^{-1}$, $h = 0.6727 \pm 0.0066$. This corresponds to the density of
901 non-baryonic dark matter evident in the CMB $\Omega_{DM} \sim 0.227 \pm 0.014$ [29].

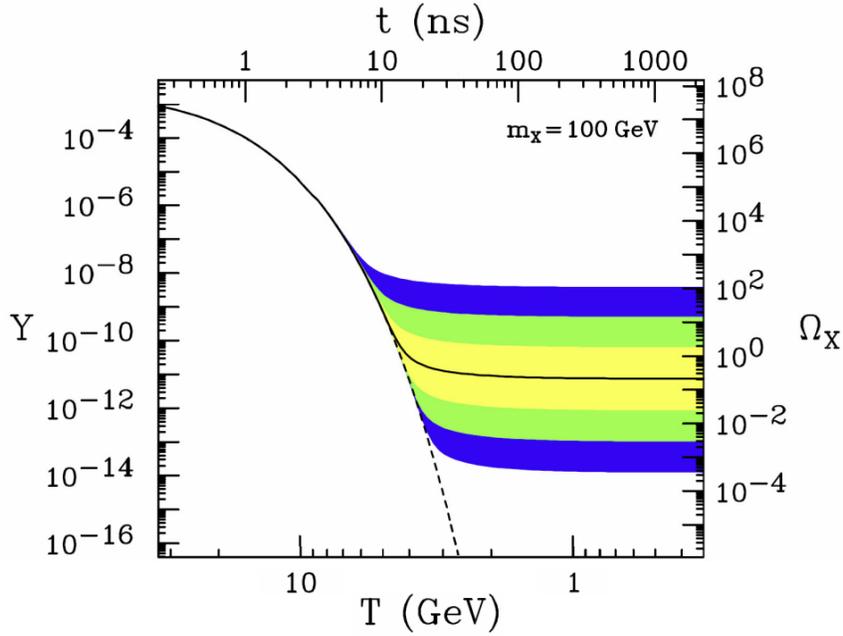


Figure 2.3: Thermal freeze-out of dark matter for different annihilation cross sections. The comoving number density Y and resulting thermal relic density Ω_χ of a 100 GeV dark matter particle as a function of temperature T . The solid line represents the dark matter cross section that yields the correct relic density, the coloured bands show the density for cross section variation of order 10, 10^2 and 10^3 from $\Omega_\chi \sim 0.23$. The dashed line shows the number density of a particle that did not “freeze-out” but remained in thermal equilibrium.

902 The thermal relic number density of dark matter is the constant approached by dark matter
903 in the event of thermal freeze out [30]. In the high temperatures of the early universe thermal
904 equilibrium is achieved, as the Universe cools and the temperature falls below the mass of the dark
905 matter, the number of dark matter particles falls exponentially. In addition to cooling, the universe
906 is also expanding which prevents the dark matter density from falling completely to zero. The
907 distribution of gaseous dark matter particles at this point is spread such that annihilation cannot
908 happen. This is the point at which thermal freeze out occurs, the number density of dark matter
909 asymptotically approaches a constant value. Thermal freeze out is shown in Figure 2.3 [16] for a
910 dark matter particle with the correct relic density. WIMPs are considered thermal dark matter,
911 as are dark photons. The dark photon model is suitable to probe the thermal relic density target,
912 whereas axion-like particles as candidates for dark matter arise from non-thermal processes.

913 2.3.2.1 The WIMP Miracle

914 Supersymmetry proposes a solution to the hierarchy problem [16] by introducing an additional sym-
915 metry between fermions and bosons that avoids the need to “fine-tune” the Higgs mass to $\mathcal{O}(100)$
916 GeV. Additionally, the huge discrepancy between the Higgs mass and the Planck scale motivates
917 new physics around the weak scale. Such new particles could be WIMPs or the supersymmetric
918 equivalent, superWIMPs. The fact that WIMPs address the hierarchy problem and provide a relic
919 density consistent with dark matter is referred to as the “WIMP miracle” [31].

920 2.3.3 Dark Sector Models

921 The absence of interactions between DM and ordinary matter motivates the idea that potential DM
922 particles χ would be neutral under SM forces G_{SM} . The same logic dictates that all SM particles
923 are neutral under an extended SM by a non-abelian gauge group G_ν [32]. However, these potential
924 light, long-lived DM particles could be charged under new forces that have not yet been discovered
925 [25]. Such new forces can be referred to as a dark sector or hidden-sector, rather than being a single
926 particle, the dark matter candidates could be an entire sector that mirrors the complexities of the
927 Standard Model.

928 This thesis will focus on hidden sector dark matter. Constraints from SM symmetries allow
929 several types of “portal” interactions between dark sectors and the SM. The mass range of hidden-

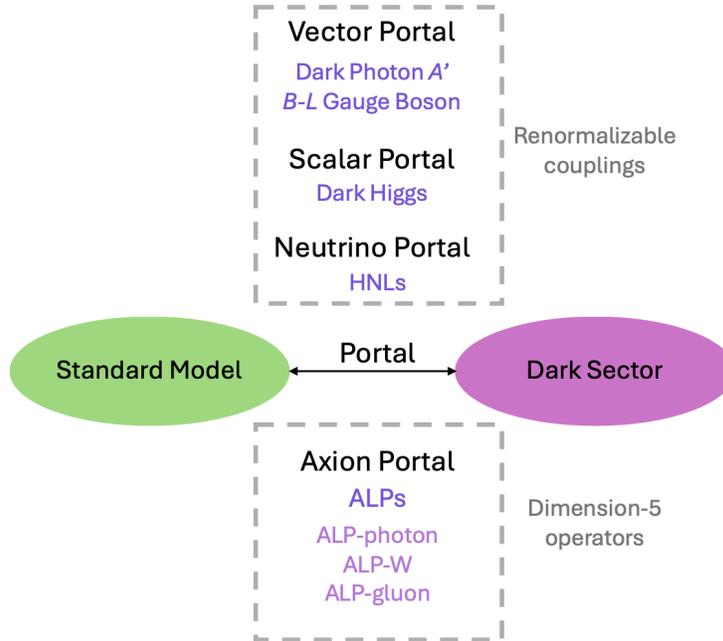


Figure 2.4: The different portals involved in dark sector dark matter models. The four main portal types are highlighted: Vector, Scalar, Neutrino, Axion, grouped by those that require renormalizable coupling and those that require higher operators.

930 sector DM lies in the vicinity of Standard Model mass scales $\mathcal{O}(100 \text{ TeV})$ down to below keV masses.
 931 FASER has sensitivity to long-lived particles with renormalisable portal interactions between the
 932 SM and the dark sector: dark photons and the $B - L$ gauge boson, dark Higgs, and heavy neutral
 933 leptons (HNLs). There is also sensitivity to pseudoscalar axion-like particles (ALPs) coupled to
 934 photons through non-renormalisable operators [33]. The different models are introduced in Figure
 935 2.4, showing the four portal types to which FASER is sensitive.

936 There is the “vector” portal mediated by the dark photon and the “axion” portal mediated
 937 by ALPs with coupling to photons (ALP-photon), the gluon (ALP-gluon) and the $SU(2)_L$ gauge
 938 boson (ALP-W). Additionally, although not explored here, there is the “Higgs” portal mediated
 939 by dark scalars and the “neutrino” portal mediated by HNLs.

940 Three of these four models are considered benchmark models defined by the CERN Physics
 941 Beyond Colliders (PBC) [34] study group: dark photons (BC1) [35], ALP-photon (BC9) and ALP-
 942 gluon (BC11) [36]. The ALP-W model [37, 38] is not considered a PBC benchmark, however, ALPs
 943 with coupling to the $SU(2)_L$ gauge boson provide a UV complete model that performed favourably
 944 over other models during optimisation studies.

2.4 Motivating a Forward Search at the LHC

In the setting of the LHC, such light, weakly interacting, long-lived candidates for dark matter are predominantly produced along the line of sight (LOS), in the far-forward region from the interaction points. The particles may travel hundreds of metres without interacting, before they decay to visible particles [33]. They are produced parallel to the beam line [39], in an inherent blind spot that the large LHC experiments are unable to access due to where the LHC beam pipe lies in relation to their experimental setup, and their focus on studying the transverse plane. FASER is ideally situated to exploit this blind spot, lying on the beam collision axis 480 m downstream of the ATLAS interaction point (IP1). More details about the location and experimental setup of FASER are given in Chapter 3.

2.5 The Dark Photon

The dark photon A' is a hypothetical particle that could provide a “vector” portal to a dark sector that contains a $U(1)'$ electromagnetic force [1]. The renormalizable interaction between $U(1)'$ and the SM results in the dark photon that kinetically mixes with the SM photon [40]. The Lagrangian which describes the dark photon is obtained from an extension of the Standard Model Lagrangian through the addition of a $U(1)'$ gauge boson A'^μ such that the Lagrangian [41] can be written as:

$$\mathcal{L} = -\frac{1}{4}F_{\mu\nu}F^{\mu\nu} - \frac{\epsilon'}{2}F_{\mu\nu}F'^{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{4}F'_{\mu\nu}F'^{\mu\nu} - eJ_\mu A^\mu - e'J'_\mu A'^\mu + \frac{1}{2}m_{A'}^2 A'^2 \quad (2.7)$$

where A^μ and A'^μ denote the gauge bosons associated with $U(1)$ hypercharge and new $U(1)'$ gauge group, respectively. $-\frac{\epsilon'}{2}F_{\mu\nu}F'^{\mu\nu}$ is the kinetic term connecting $F_{\mu\nu}$, the electromagnetic field strength tensor associated with the Standard Model $U(1)$, and $F'^{\mu\nu}$, the tensor associated with $U(1)'$ and the dark sector. $m_{A'}$ is the mass of the dark photon and J_μ is the hypercharge current, e and e' is the electric charge and the charge associated with the dark sector, respectively.

The detection of the dark photon is made possible by its kinematic mixing with the Standard Model photon, the strength of the coupling between the SM and the dark sector is governed by a mixing parameter ϵ . After redefining the fields and rotating to the mass eigenstates [41], the new

969 gauge boson acquires a coupling to the $U(1)$ hypercharge that is proportional to ϵ' . The coupling
 970 $\epsilon = \epsilon' \cos \theta_W$, where θ_W is the weak mixing angle, and the hypercharge current $J_\mu = \sum_f \bar{f} A' \gamma f$.
 971 The Lagrangian [1] for the dark photon can therefore be written:

$$\mathcal{L} \supset \frac{1}{2} m_{A'}^2 A'^2 - \epsilon e \sum_f q_f \bar{f} A' \gamma f. \quad (2.8)$$

972 where $m_{A'}$ is the mass of the dark photon and ϵ is the kinetic mixing parameter that defines the
 973 parameter space of the dark photon model. The sum is over all SM fermions f with normalised
 974 electric charge q_f .

975 The size of the kinetic mixing parameter ϵ determines the strength of the interaction, hence
 976 the lifetime of the dark photon. The kinetic mixing parameter can be anything between 10^{-11}
 977 and 10^{-2} . The lower the kinematic coupling, the lower the decay rate to SM particles, which is
 978 proportional to ϵ^2 , and hence the longer lived the particle is. The kinetic mixing of the dark photon
 979 needs to be small to motivate that such a dark matter candidate has not yet been observed.

980 2.5.1 Dark Photon Production and Decay

981 Dark photon production in the very forward region takes place predominantly via light meson
 982 decays and dark bremsstrahlung. Dark bremsstrahlung is the emission of a dark photon from a
 983 proton in the presence of a magnetic field [33]. These processes produce highly-energetic dark
 984 photons along the LOS with a decay length compatible with the location of FASER. The Feynman
 985 diagrams for dark photon production via neutral pion decay and dark bremsstrahlung are shown in
 986 Figure 2.5. For light meson decays, the example of π^0 decay is shown as it is the dominant signal
 987 contribution, however, there is also a significant contribution from η decay which is a comparable
 988 production mode for $m_{A'} \sim 100$ MeV, occurring via the same mechanism.

989 Dark photon production via neutral pion decay $\pi^0 \rightarrow A' \gamma$ is accessible for $m_{A'} < m_{\pi^0} \approx 135$
 990 MeV, with a branching fraction of $B(\pi^0 \rightarrow A' \gamma) = 2\epsilon^2 (1 - m_{A'}^2/m_{\pi^0}^2)^3 B(\pi^0 \rightarrow \gamma \gamma)$ where $B(\pi^0 \rightarrow$
 991 $\gamma \gamma) \approx 0.99$ [1, 42]. Production via eta meson decay $\eta \rightarrow A' \gamma$ is accessible for $m_{A'} < m_\eta \approx 548$ MeV,
 992 with a branching fraction of $B(\eta \rightarrow A' \gamma) = 2\epsilon^2 (1 - m_{A'}^2/m_\eta^2)^3 B(\eta \rightarrow \gamma \gamma)$ where $B(\eta \rightarrow \gamma \gamma) \approx 0.39$
 993 [1, 42]. Production via dark bremsstrahlung $pp \rightarrow pp A'$ is accessible for $m_{A'}$ up to $\mathcal{O}(2 \text{ GeV})$ [35].

994 Dark photon production can occur through other mechanisms involving the decays of heavier

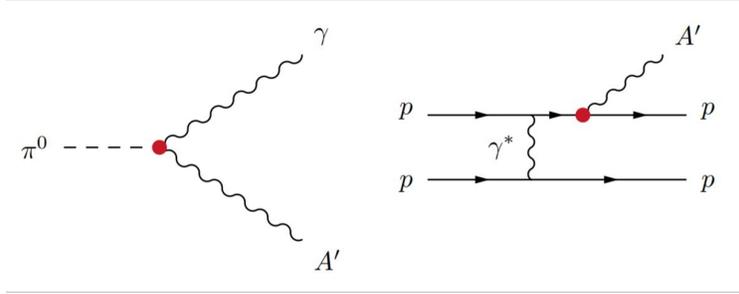


Figure 2.5: Feynman diagrams for LLP production processes: dark photon production from pion decay (left), dark photon production via dark bremsstrahlung (right). The red circle indicates the kinetic mixing parameter ϵ .

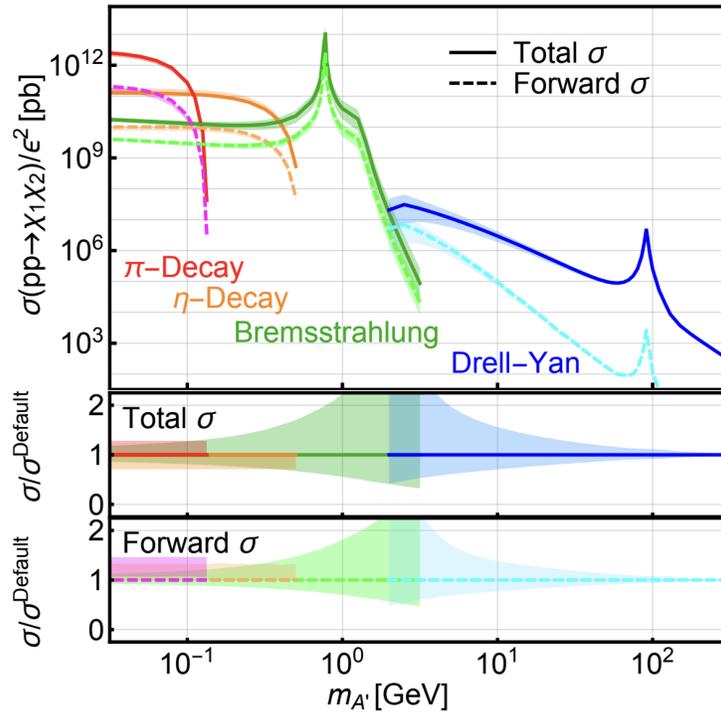


Figure 2.6: Inelastic dark photon production cross section (per ϵ^2) as a function of mass. The total cross section and the far-forward cross section are shown.

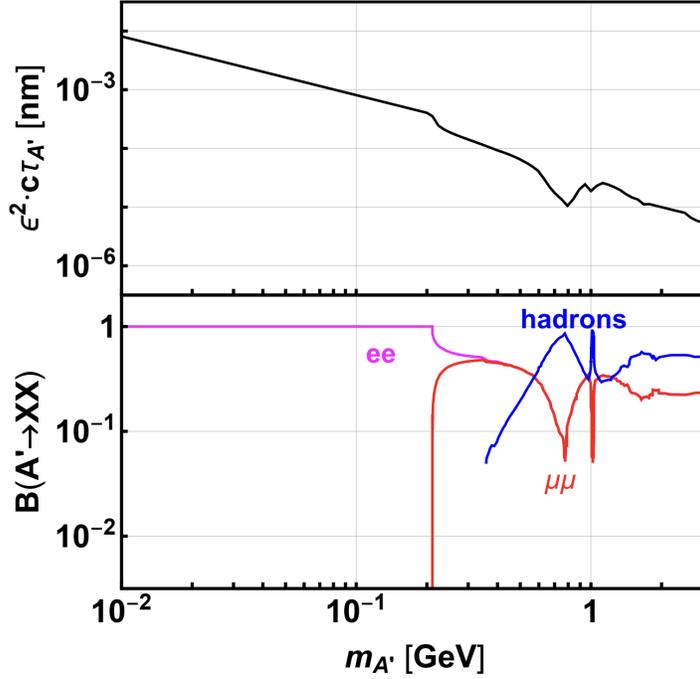


Figure 2.7: (Top) The decay length of the dark photon in the parameter space that FASER is sensitive to. (Bottom) The branching fractions of the dark photon into leptonic and hadronic final states, as a function of dark photon mass.

995 mesons such as through η' meson decay or through direct Drell-Yan production in which a quark-
 996 antiquark pair annihilate to produce a dark photon $q\bar{q} \rightarrow A'$ [43]. These production mechanisms
 997 have very small cross sections at the dark photon mass range of interest, hence they can be con-
 998 sidered sub-dominant and their contributions, therefore, neglected. An overview of the total and
 999 far-forward production cross section for dark photons is shown in Figure 2.6 [44]. The highest dark
 1000 photon mass considered in the search for dark photons described in this thesis is $m_{A'} = 112$ MeV,
 1001 the Drell-Yan production mechanism becomes relevant at masses above $m_{A'} \sim 1$ GeV.

1002 In the case where $E_{A'} \gg m_{A'} \gg m_e$ where $E_{A'}$ is the energy of A' , dark photons typically have
 1003 a mass $m_{A'} \sim 100$ MeV and coupling $\epsilon \sim 10^{-5}$ with a decay length [35]:

$$L = c\tau\gamma\beta \sim (80 \text{ m}) \left[\frac{10^{-5}}{\epsilon} \right]^2 \left[\frac{E_{A'}}{\text{TeV}} \right] \left[\frac{100 \text{ MeV}}{m_{A'}} \right]^2 \quad (2.9)$$

1004 where τ is the lifetime of the dark photon, travelling at speed $\beta = v/c$ where c is the speed of light.
 1005 Dark photons with this mass and coupling have $\mathcal{O}(\text{TeV})$ energy and a decay length of the order of
 1006 80 m, this is well within the range of FASER's sensitivity to LLPs. The dark photon decay length

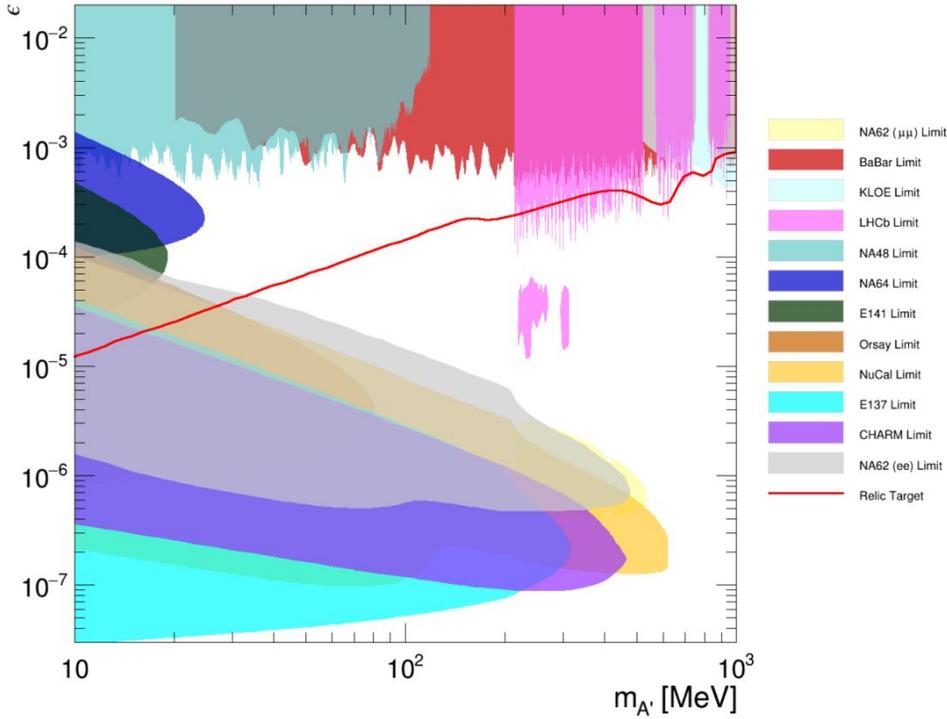


Figure 2.8: Existing experimental constraints in the parameter space probed in FASER’s search for dark photons. Includes existing limits from the BaBar collaboration, the KLOE experiment, the LHCb collaboration, NA62, NA64, NA48, E141, Orsay, NuCal, E137, CHARM.

1007 and the branching fraction into different leptonic and hadronic final states is shown in Figure 2.7.
 1008 Dark photons with masses in the range $2m_e < m_{A'} < 2m_\mu \simeq 211$ MeV decay to e^+e^- pairs with a
 1009 branching fraction of 100%.

1010 2.5.2 The Parameter Space and Existing Limits

1011 Figure 2.8 gives a picture of the dark photon parameter space and the existing limits from exper-
 1012 iments that have also searched for a massive dark photon with kinetic mixing between $U(1)'$ and
 1013 hypercharge. The thermal relic density is shown in red, in order for the dark photon model to
 1014 correspond to $\Omega_\chi h^2 = 0.12$ the mass ratio between the dark matter candidate and the dark photon
 1015 is equal to $m_\chi/m_{A'} = 0.6$ and the dark photon coupling constant to dark matter has a fixed value
 1016 of $\alpha_{DM} = 0.1$ [1]. These constraints ensure that the dark photon visibly decays to SM fermions.

1017 Existing experimental constraints in the parameter space probed by FASER’s search for dark

1018 photons includes limits set by: BaBar [45], KLOE [46], LHCb [47], NA62 [48, 49], NA64 [50], NA48
 1019 [51], E141 [52], Orsay [53], NuCal [54], E137 [55] and CHARM [56]. The different experimental
 1020 efforts can be divided into results from: electron beam dumps [57], proton beam dumps [58], e^+e^-
 1021 colliders, pp collisions, meson decays and electron fixed-target experiments [59].

1022 Limits set by electron beam dump experiments tend to be in the low mass region across a
 1023 broad range of couplings, for example NA64, E141 and E137 all show results from electron beam
 1024 dumps. Extending to slightly higher mass range and in a region of relatively low coupling are the
 1025 results from proton beam dumps, for example the Orsay, NuCal and CHARM limits [60]. Across
 1026 most of the mass range in the parameter space FASER is sensitive to, and tending to be at higher
 1027 coupling than the electron and proton beam dump experiments ($\epsilon > 10^{-3}$), are the results from
 1028 e^+e^- colliders such as BaBar and KLOE. Results from pp collisions tend to target parameter space
 1029 at high coupling and with dark photon mass towards $\mathcal{O}(1 \text{ GeV})$, for example the limit in pink set
 1030 by LHCb which searched for dark photon decays with $\mu^+\mu^-$ final states. FASER’s search for dark
 1031 photons particularly targets the region of unexplored parameter space with $\epsilon \sim 10^{-5} - 10^{-4}$ and
 1032 with masses $m_{A'}$ $\sim 10 \text{ MeV} - 100 \text{ MeV}$.

1033 2.6 Axion-like Particles

1034 Solutions to the strong CP problem have been proposed in many forms [61, 62], one of the most
 1035 successful solutions is the Peccei-Quinn Mechanism [38]. The global $U(1)$ symmetry (the PQ
 1036 symmetry) is spontaneously broken by the QCD axion a [63]. Its coupling to ordinary matter
 1037 is proportional to $1/f_a$, where f_a is the scale at which electroweak symmetry breaking (EWSB)
 1038 occurs. The physical mechanism that leads to the axion is model dependent and also allows for
 1039 other axion-like particles (ALPs) [61].

1040 Axion-like particles (ALPs) are defined as pseudoscalar particles coupled to SM particles by
 1041 dimension-5 couplings to gauge bosons or derivative interactions to fermions [64]. ALPs can nat-
 1042 urally serve as the source of dark matter in the universe, providing an “axion” portal to the dark
 1043 sector.

1044 This section will look at three ALP models: ALPs with coupling to the SM photon, referred to
 1045 in this work as the ALP-photon model, ALPs with coupling to the gluon, referred to as ALP-gluon

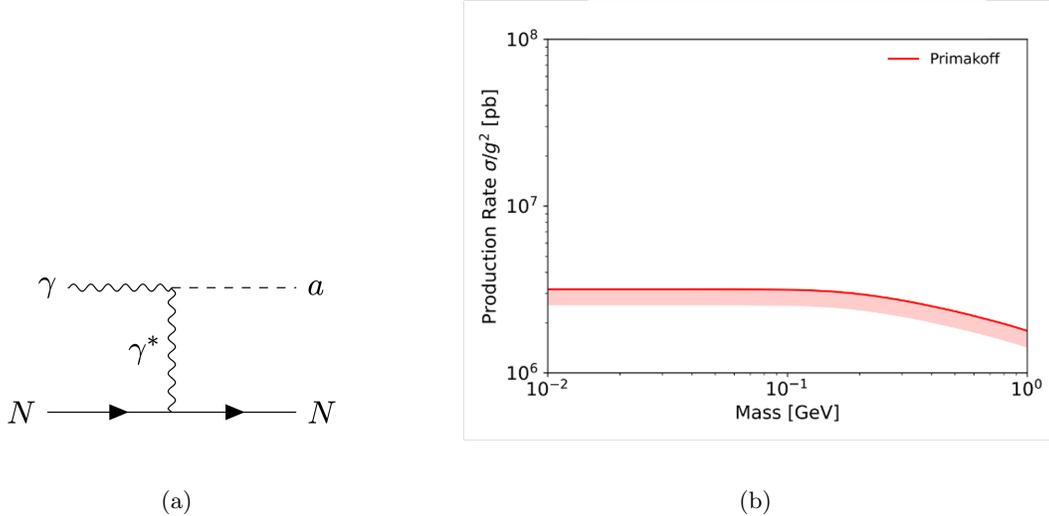


Figure 2.9: (a) ALP-photon production via the Primakoff process in which a photon is converted into an ALP when colliding with a nucleus. In the context of FASER, this would be LHC infrastructure, most likely the TAN (neutral particle absorber). (b) The production rate of ALPs from the Primakoff process within an angular acceptance $\theta < 0.2$ mrad with energy $E > 1$ TeV.

1046 model and ALPs with coupling to the $SU(2)_L$ gauge boson, referred to as the ALP-W model. All
 1047 the models considered decay to SM final states, resulting in a highly-energetic di-photon signature.

1048 2.6.1 ALPs with Coupling to Photons

1049 ALPs with coupling only to SM photons is a benchmark model [33] for which the relevant La-
 1050 grangian is:

$$\mathcal{L} \supset \frac{1}{2} m_a^2 a^2 - \frac{1}{4} g_{a\gamma\gamma} a F_{\mu\nu} \tilde{F}^{\mu\nu} \quad (2.10)$$

1051 where, at low energy scales (below the scale of EWSB), the di-photon coupling $g_{a\gamma\gamma} = 1/f_\gamma$ [33].

1052 In the far forward region, ALPs with coupling to photons are highly energetic and produced
 1053 predominantly via the Primakoff process [33]. In the Primakoff process the photon is converted
 1054 into an ALP when it collides with a nucleus, this is illustrated in Figure 2.9a. There are addi-
 1055 tional processes that produce ALPs at FASER but these contributions to the signal are considered
 1056 subdominant for this model. The production rate via the Primakoff process is shown in Figure
 1057 2.9b.

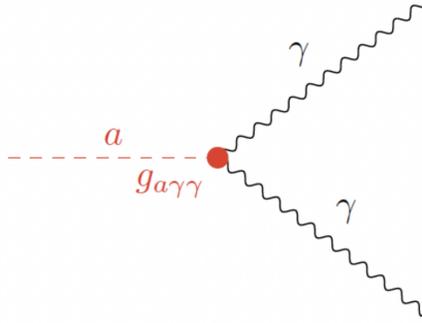


Figure 2.10: ALP-photon decay to two highly energetic photons.

1058 ALPs with momentum in the TeV range typically have a mass $m_a \sim 50$ MeV and a coupling
 1059 $g_{a\gamma\gamma} \sim 10^{-4}$. The decay length is of the order of several hundred metres, according to Equation
 1060 2.11 [36]:

$$L = c\tau\gamma\beta \sim 630 \text{ m} \left[\frac{10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}}{g_{a\gamma\gamma}} \right]^2 \left[\frac{p_a}{\text{TeV}} \right] \left[\frac{50 \text{ MeV}}{m_a} \right]^4, \quad (2.11)$$

1061 where p_a is the momentum of the ALP, τ is the lifetime of the ALP, travelling at speed $\beta = v/c$
 1062 where c is the speed of light. The ALP decay length is within the range of FASER's sensitivity to
 1063 LLPs.

1064 ALPs with coupling to photons predominantly decay to a highly-energetic di-photon pair as is
 1065 shown in Figure 2.10. There is a sub-leading decay channel in which one of the photons is produced
 1066 off-shell and converts into an e^+e^- pair, this has a branching fraction of around 1% [36].

1067 2.6.2 ALP with Coupling to Gluons

1068 As discussed in this chapter, the concept of axions and axion-like particles was introduced in an
 1069 attempt to solve the strong CP problem [14, 65]. The mass of the QCD axion is set by its coupling
 1070 to gluons, and so a model in which axion-like particles couple only to gluons can be considered.
 1071 This is also a PBC benchmark case, the Lagrangian describing this ALP-gluon model is:

$$\mathcal{L} \supset -\frac{1}{2}m_a^2 a^2 - \frac{g_s^2}{8} g_{agg} G_{\mu\nu}^a \tilde{G}^{a\mu\nu} \quad (2.12)$$

1072 where g_{agg} is the ALP coupling constant and Λ represents the QCD scale, it is expected that
 1073 the mass of such ALPs will be $m_a \ll \Lambda$ [66]. ALPs in this model can be produced in flavour-

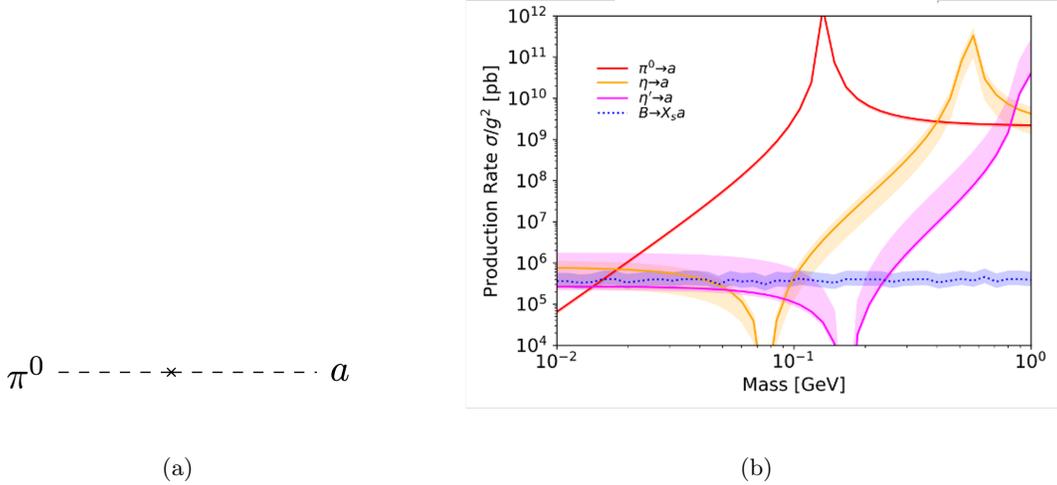


Figure 2.11: (a) ALP-gluon production via pion mixing.(b) The production rate of ALP-gluon from $\pi^0 \rightarrow a$, $\eta \rightarrow a$ and $\eta' \rightarrow a$ within an angular acceptance $\theta < 0.2$ mrad with energy $E > 1$ TeV.

1074 changing neutral-current (FCNC) B -meson decays, however, this element is loop suppressed and
 1075 sub-leading. The dominant production modes in the ALP-gluon case are $\pi^0 \rightarrow a$, $\eta \rightarrow a$ and
 1076 $\eta' \rightarrow a$. ALP production via π^0 mixing is shown in Figure 2.11a and an overview of production
 1077 rate for these various modes is shown in Figure 2.11b.

1078 The dominant decay mode for ALP-gluon interactions at low masses is to two photons, depicted
 1079 in Figure 2.12 . At $m_a > 3m_\pi$ decays via $a \rightarrow 3\pi^0$ and $a \rightarrow \pi^+\pi^-\pi^0$ become accessible [66], each
 1080 of these modes has a similar decay rate.

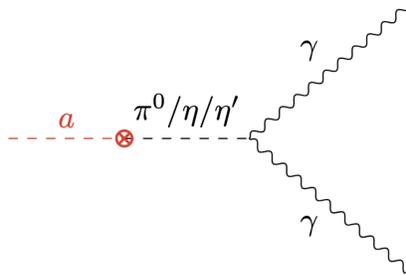


Figure 2.12: ALP-gluon decay to two highly-energetic photons, using pion mixing.

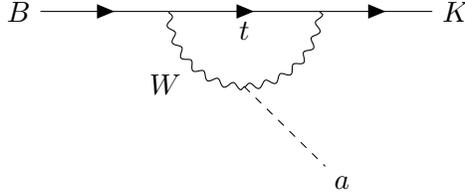


Figure 2.13: ALP production via top loop, involving B meson decay to kaon and a W boson.

1081 2.6.3 ALPs with Coupling to the $SU(2)_L$ Gauge Boson

1082 ALPs can couple to the SM field strength tensor $W_{\mu\nu}^a$ from the $SU(2)$ gauge group [37], this is a
 1083 possible UV completion of the ALP with photon couplings, the Lagrangian for this coupling is:

$$\mathcal{L} \supset -\frac{1}{2}m_a^2 a^2 - \frac{g_{aWW}}{4} a W_{\mu\nu}^a \tilde{W}_{\mu\nu}^a \quad (2.13)$$

1084 where m_a is the mass of the ALP and g_{aWW} is the coupling constant with dimensions GeV^{-1} .

1085 The coupling to the $SU(2)_L$ gauge boson occurs before electroweak symmetry breaking; after
 1086 EWSB additional couplings of the ALP to $\gamma\gamma$, ZZ and $Z\gamma$ open up [37], the strengths of these
 1087 additional ALP couplings are dictated by the weak mixing angle. The production of ALPs in Z
 1088 decays is rare and can be neglected; the production of ALPs with coupling to photons through the
 1089 Primakoff process provides a subleading contribution to the ALP event rate in this case.

1090 In the ALP- W model, the ALP is primarily produced in B meson decays, although the coupling
 1091 to the W boson also gives rise to kaon decays at a sub-dominant rate. Figure 2.13 shows an example
 1092 Feynman diagram for ALP production in $B \rightarrow X_s a$ in the case where the strange hadron is a kaon.
 1093 The loop diagram is facilitated by flavour-changing down-type quark-decay, or flavour changing
 1094 neutral-current (FCNC) decay.

1095 The leading production processes are $B^0 \rightarrow X_s a$ and $B^\pm \rightarrow X_s a$ where X_s represents a strange
 1096 hadron. Decays of other B mesons including B_s still have subdominant contributions to the produc-
 1097 tion rate. Kaon decay also contributes at a lower rate, with a sharp cutoff in mass range compared
 1098 to the other modes considered. The production rate in the mass range $10 \text{ MeV} < m_a < 1 \text{ GeV}$
 1099 relevant for the ALP- W search is shown in Figure 2.14 for $B^0 \rightarrow X_s a$, $B^\pm \rightarrow X_s a$, $B_s \rightarrow X_s a$ and
 1100 $K \rightarrow \pi a$. The production via B meson decay is dominant across the entire parameter space.

1101 The ALP decays to a highly-energetic di-photon pair, shown in Figure 2.15. There is also the

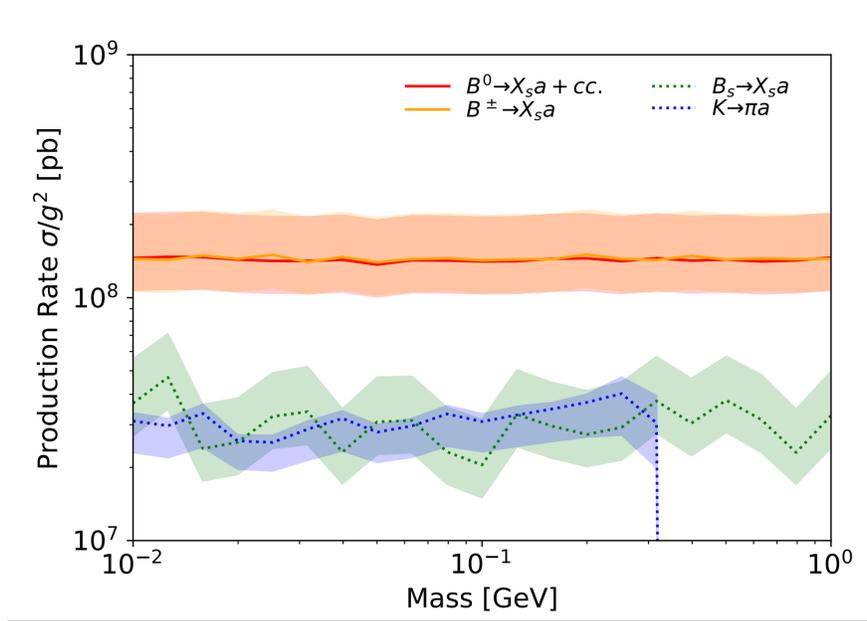


Figure 2.14: The production rate of ALPs from B meson and Kaon decays in the mass range of interest in this analysis. There are four production modes relevant to this ALP model: $B^0 \rightarrow X_s a$, $B^\pm \rightarrow X_s a$, $B_s \rightarrow X_s a$ and $K \rightarrow \pi a$. The shaded bands indicate the uncertainty associated with these production modes.

1102 possibility of a radioactively induced decay that includes a converted photon: $a \rightarrow \gamma e e$, this decay
 1103 channel contributes only at the level of a few percent and is neglected in this search.

1104 2.6.3.1 The Parameter Space and Existing Limits

1105 Figure 2.16 shows the parameter space of interest to FASER with this ALP search with coupling to
 1106 the W boson. Existing constraints in this parameter space have been set by: NuCal, NA62/64 [67],

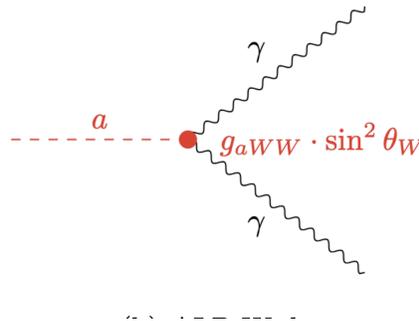


Figure 2.15: A typical ALP decay signature to two highly collimated and highly energetic photons in the case of the ALP- W model. The red circle indicates the ALP coupling constant g_{aWW} .

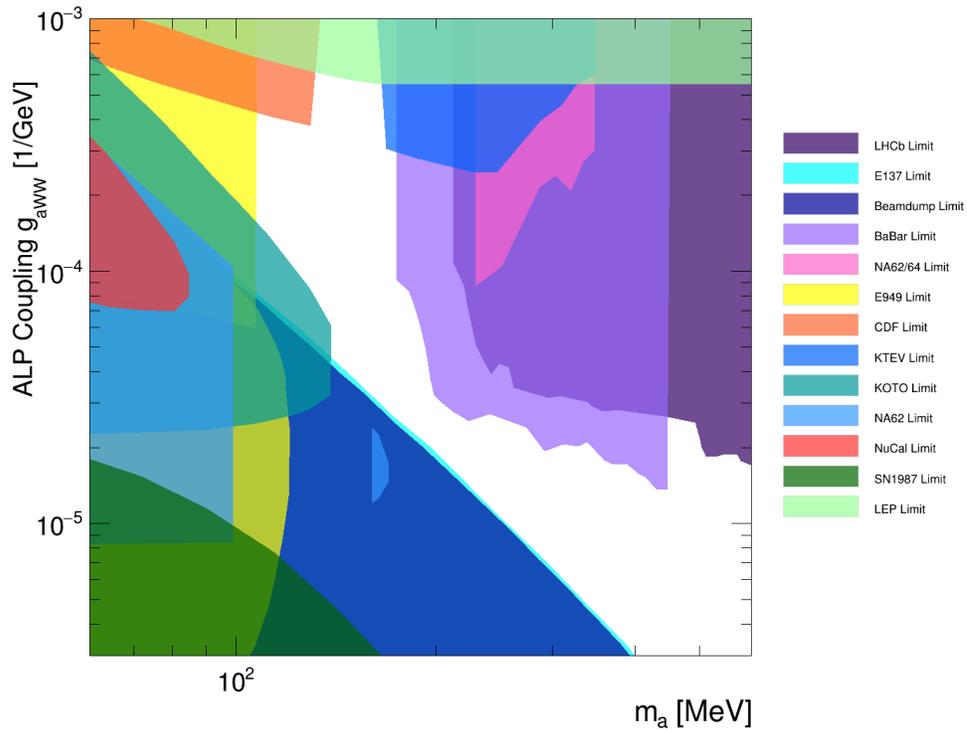


Figure 2.16: Existing experimental constraints in the parameter space probed in FASER’s search for axion-like particles with coupling to the W boson. Includes existing limits from NuCal, NA62/64, beam dumps, KTEV, KOTO, E949, CDF, BaBar, E137, NA62, SN1987, NA62, E949, LHCb and LEP.

1107 beam dumps, KTEV [68], KOTO [69], E949 [70, 71], CDF [72], BaBar [73], E137 [55], NA62,
1108 SN1987 [74], NA62 [75], E949, LHCb and LEP [76].

1109 Experimental results from the BaBar collaboration come from studying B^\pm decays in $B\bar{B}$
1110 meson pairs at SLAC. The experiment probes a similar parameter space to FASER, at a slightly
1111 higher ALP mass. Experiments with sensitivity at weaker coupling include results from SN1987,
1112 which search for ALPs emitted during supernova. At stronger couplings, the parameter space is
1113 probed by LEP in searches for ALPs produced in Z decays. Experimental results from the KOTO
1114 collaboration show “possible observation of three anomalous events in the search for $K_L \rightarrow \pi^0 \nu \bar{\nu}$ ”
1115 [37], this observation would indicate a branching fraction that exceeds the SM prediction by two
1116 orders of magnitude. A potential explanation for this discrepancy would be the introduction of
1117 a new light (so that it can be produced in kaon decays), weakly-interacting, long-lived particle
1118 with a mass of the order of a few MeV, such as the ALP. FASER has the possibility to answer
1119 the questions raised by this neutral kaon anomaly, benefiting particularly from its sensitivity to a
1120 much higher amount of high-energy LLP decay events with very low SM background [37].

1121 Chapter 3

1122 The LHC Experiment

1123 This chapter provides an overview of the CERN accelerator complex and LHC infrastructure in
1124 the context of the LHC experiment. The concept of luminosity is introduced and a detailed
1125 description of the components of the LHC detector is given.

1126 3.1 The LHC

1127 The Large Hadron Collider (LHC) is the largest and most powerful particle accelerator in the world.
1128 It consists of a 27 km ring of superconducting magnets and was switched on for the first time on
1129 10th September 2008. The LHC is capable of creating both proton-proton collisions and lead ion
1130 collisions; this thesis will focus on *pp* collisions.

1131 The CERN accelerator complex, modified from Ref. [77], is shown in Figure 3.1. The protons
1132 accelerated in the LHC are fed into a chain of accelerators starting from a single source of hydrogen
1133 gas which is ionised to produce negative hydrogen ions. LINAC4 accelerates the negative hydrogen
1134 ions to 160 MeV [78] and the ions are stripped of their two electrons during injection into the
1135 Booster. Within the Booster the protons reach an energy of 2 GeV in preparation for injection
1136 into the Proton Synchrotron (PS). Within the PS the protons reach an energy of 26 GeV and are
1137 accelerated to 450 GeV in the Super Proton Synchrotron SPS, the final stage before the proton
1138 beam enters the LHC. The LHC accelerates each proton to an energy of 6.8 TeV, resulting in a
1139 centre of mass energy $\sqrt{s} = 13.6$ TeV.

1140 Each proton beam is split up into 2835 bunches of 10^{11} protons, separated in time by 25 ns [79].

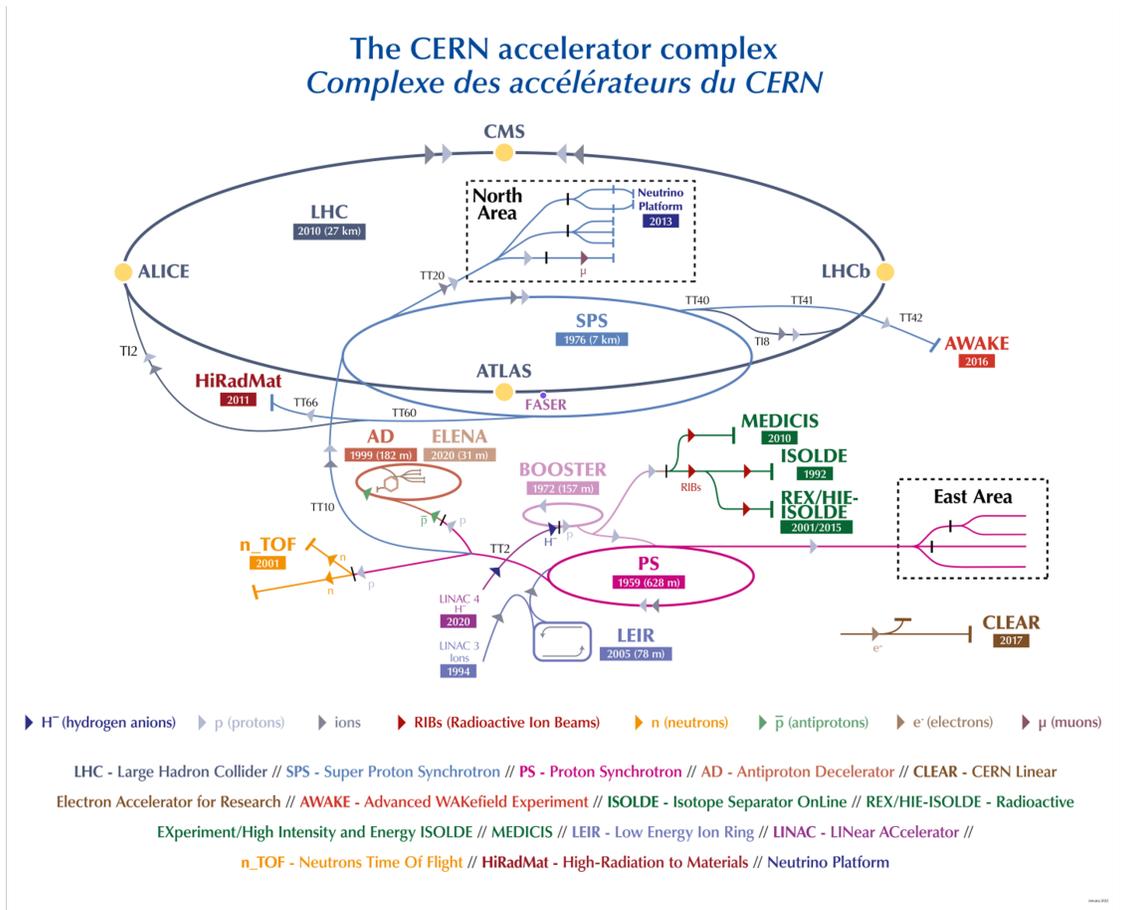


Figure 3.1: A diagram of the CERN accelerator complex, modified to include FASER in the TT12 tunnel that connected the LHC and the SPS in the time of LEP.

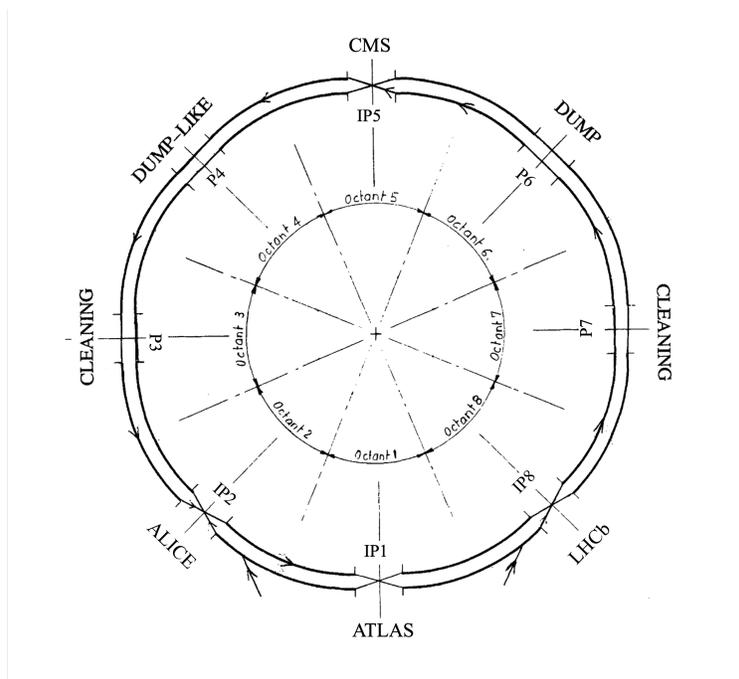


Figure 3.2: Schematic diagram of the octants of the LHC. It shows the 4 interaction points where the largest experiments are situated.

1141 The bunches are accelerated using 16 radiofrequency (RF) cavities housed in 4 cryomodules along
 1142 the LHC ring, the field within the RF cavities oscillates at such a frequency that the structure
 1143 of the proton bunches is maintained. Figure 3.2 shows the octants that form the LHC ring [79].
 1144 There are 8 arcs separated by 8 straight sections with a total of 1232 dipole magnets, for bending
 1145 the beam, and 392 quadrupole magnets, for focusing the beam. The injection of proton bunches
 1146 into the LHC machine is referred to as a “fill”.

1147 The two proton beams are accelerated in opposite directions and collisions occur at dedicated
 1148 interaction points located around the LHC ring. The four large experiments at the LHC are
 1149 positioned to correspond to these crossing points. The ATLAS experiment is located at Interaction
 1150 Point (IP) 1, ALICE at IP2, CMS at IP5 and LHCb at IP8.

1151 In addition to FASER, there are four other small experiments at the LHC: SND@LHC, LHCf,
 1152 MoEDAL and TOTEM. SND@LHC is an experiment designed to detect collider neutrinos, it has
 1153 a complimentary neutrino program to FASER and is located on the opposite side of the ATLAS
 1154 IP in the forward region. LHCf is an astroparticle physics experiment designed to study particles
 1155 in the forward region to determine the origin of ultra-high-energy cosmic rays, it is comprised of

1156 two independent detectors that sit 140 m either side of the ATLAS IP. MoEDAL is an experiment
 1157 designed to directly search for the magnetic monopole, located at the LHCb IP. Finally, TOTEM
 1158 is an experiment aimed at measuring the proton-proton interaction cross section, elastic scattering
 1159 and diffraction processes at the LHC, it is located at the CMS IP.

1160 LHC operations are divided into Runs, when beam circulates in the LHC and physics data
 1161 taking commences, and Long Shutdowns (LS), when the machine is switched off and maintenance
 1162 and upgrades are carried out. Run 1 began in 2009 until 2013, followed by 2 years of LS1. Run 2
 1163 began in 2015 until 2018, followed by 5 years of LS2. Run 3 began in March 2022; as of 2024, Run
 1164 3 is ongoing with LS3 planned to start at the end of 2025. The LHC does not run in the winter
 1165 months, from November to February there is a Year End Technical Stop (YETS) for smaller scale
 1166 maintenance and planned access to the LHC tunnel.

1167 3.1.1 Luminosity

1168 The instantaneous luminosity delivered in a particle collider is defined as the rate of collisions
 1169 between particles in the two beams; the integrated luminosity is the total number of collisions that
 1170 occur over a particular period of time. The total number of expected events is calculated from the
 1171 cross section of the interaction and the instantaneous luminosity. The cross section of an interaction
 1172 is a measure of the probability of a particular process and is defined in Chapter 5.1. The cross
 1173 section is typically written as σ and measured in barns (b); a barn is a unit of area corresponding
 1174 to 10^{-28} m².

1175 In the case of process X, the expected number of events can be calculated as:

$$N_{Events}(pp \rightarrow X) = \sigma_{(pp \rightarrow X)} L \quad (3.1)$$

1176 where L is the integrated luminosity which is measured in inverse barns (b^{-1}) and can be written
 1177 as the integral of the instantaneous luminosity with respect to time, $L = \int \mathcal{L} dt$. The instantaneous
 1178 luminosity [80] is defined as:

$$\mathcal{L} = \frac{N_b^2 n_b f_{rev} \gamma_r}{4\pi \epsilon_n \beta^*} F \quad (3.2)$$

1179 where N_b^2 is the number of particles per bunch, f_{rev} is the revolution frequency, γ_r is the relativistic

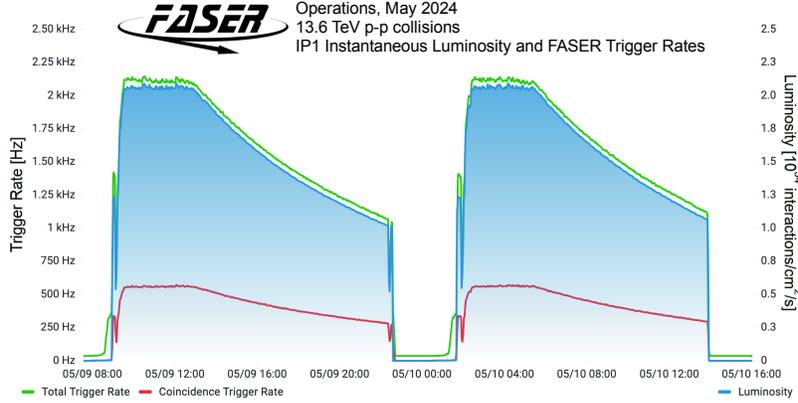


Figure 3.3: The instantaneous luminosity measured at IP1 and the total and coincidence trigger rate recorded by FASER for 2 LHC fills in May 2024. The instantaneous luminosity is provided by ATLAS and shown in blue, the total trigger output rate is shown in green. The output rate of a coincidence trigger requiring a signal the veto scintillator and the preshower scintillator, is shown in red.

1180 gamma factor, ϵ_n is the normalised transverse beam emission at the IP, β^* is the optical beta
 1181 function at the collision point, and F is the geometric luminosity reduction factor [80] due to the
 1182 crossing angle at the IP. The crossing angle is the full angle between the orbits of beam 1 and beam
 1183 2 in the LHC [79]. The beta function describes the “squeezing” of the beam; a low β^* represents a
 1184 narrow beam and a higher value of β^* describes a wider, straight beam.

1185 Figure 3.3 shows the instantaneous luminosity measured at IP1 and delivered to FASER during
 1186 two LHC fills in May 2024. Figure 3.4 shows the total integrated luminosity versus time delivered
 1187 to FASER during stable beams for pp collisions at 13.6 TeV centre-of-mass energy in 2022, 2023
 1188 and 2024 [81]. The luminosity information shown is provided by the ATLAS Collaboration [82]
 1189 using their latest calibration. In 2022 FASER recorded 27.0 fb^{-1} suitable for the analyses discussed
 1190 in this thesis; in 2023 a further 30.7 fb^{-1} was recorded. As of July 2024, over 110 fb^{-1} has been
 1191 delivered to FASER; Run 3 aims to achieve a total integrated luminosity of $L = 250 \text{ fb}^{-1}$.

1192 3.2 The FASER Detector

1193 The FASER experiment sits in the TI12 tunnel, 480 m downstream of the ATLAS Interaction Point
 1194 (IP1) [39] positioned in the far-forward region along the beam collision axis line of sight (LOS).
 1195 The location of the detector in relation to the ATLAS IP and the LHC is shown in Figure 3.5.

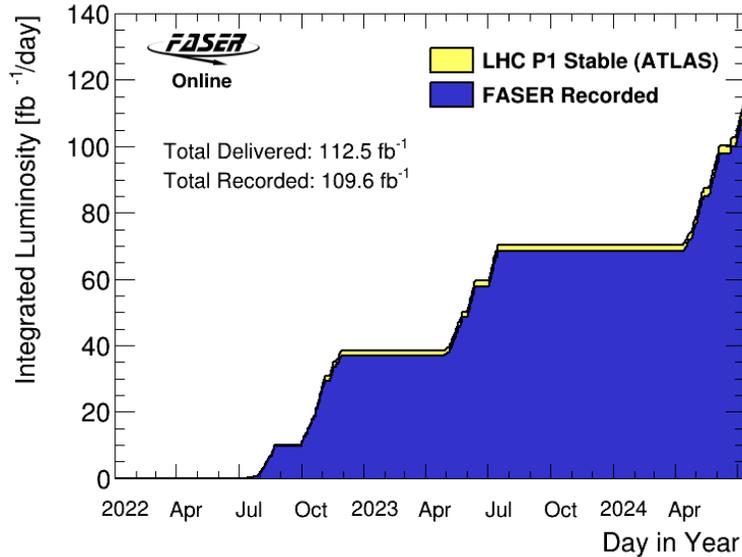


Figure 3.4: The total luminosity delivered during LHC stable beams as of July 2024 (measurement by ATLAS) (yellow). The total luminosity recorded by FASER (blue).

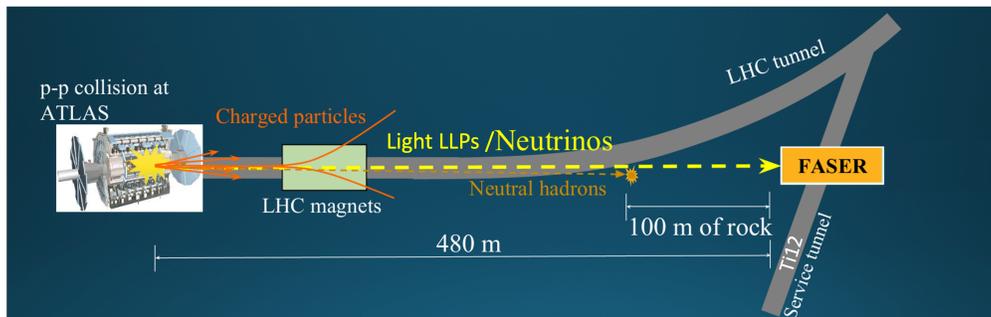


Figure 3.5: FASER’s location in service tunnel TI12, 480m east of the ATLAS IP.

1196 TI12 is a former service tunnel that connected the LHC tunnel to the SPS in the time of LEP.
 1197 The tunnel slopes slightly upwards, to connect to the shallower SPS, this was something that was
 1198 taken into account to make sure FASER sits on the beam collision axis which passes along the floor
 1199 of TI12 [33]. A 45 cm deep trench was dug to lower the floor, the exact position of the LOS is
 1200 determined by the beam crossing angle and polarity at IP1, the position of the FASER experiment
 1201 can be adjusted to account for a possible shift in these parameters [83]. The 480 m between IP1
 1202 and FASER consists of a 270 m long straight insertion section before the beam enters an arc and
 1203 bends away from the beam collision axis. The remaining distance includes ~ 10 m of concrete and
 1204 90 m of rock.

1205 A schematic of FASER in relation to the LHC infrastructure between the ATLAS IP and TI12

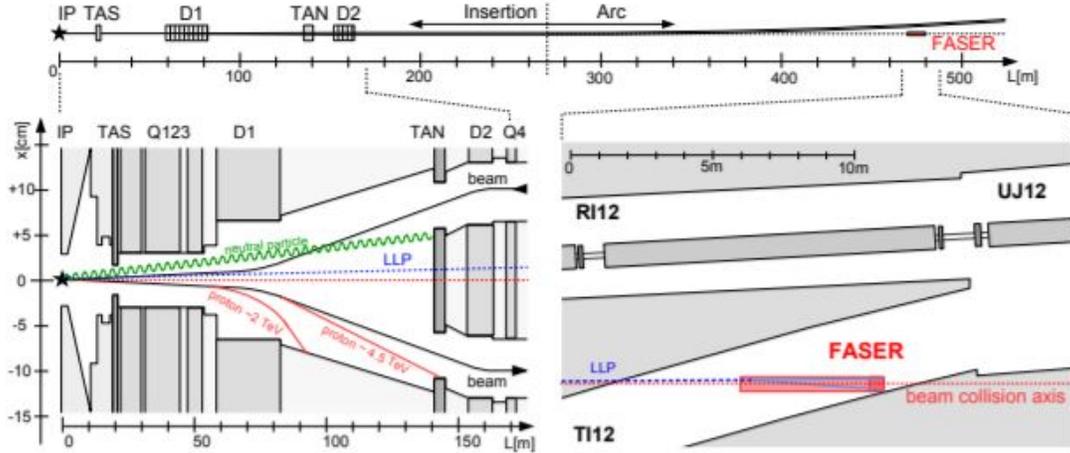


Figure 3.6: Schematic view of the far-forward region downstream of ATLAS and various particle trajectories as they make their way through the LHC infrastructure towards FASER. The upper panel shows the 480 metres between the IP and FASER, the beam collision axis is shown with a dotted line, and several components of the LHC, which have a large influence on the particle flux seen at FASER, are highlighted. The lower left of the Figure shows various high energy particles that can be produced at the IP. LLPs travel through the LHC infrastructure without interacting, the lower right of the figure shows LLPs arriving at FASER, 480 m after they are produced.

1206 can be seen in Figure 3.6 [84]. After the interaction point, the two proton beams reside in a
 1207 single beam pipe following the collision. After the TAS (Target Absorber for Secondary particles),
 1208 the beam is separated by the inner beam separation dipole magnet [79] which also deflects other
 1209 charged particles. At a distance of around 140 m from the IP, the TAN (Target Absorber for Neutral
 1210 particles) absorbs neutral particles produced at the IP and the proton beams are transitioned into
 1211 individual beam pipes, the horizontal separation between the beams is 96 mm [85]. At around 160
 1212 m downstream, the proton beam passes the outer beam separation dipole magnet, this gives the
 1213 beams a horizontal separation of 194 mm and ensures they are parallel. At 270 m downstream of
 1214 ATLAS the LHC magnets start to deflect the beam and the tunnel curves away from the collision
 1215 axis. Charged particles produced in the far-forward region are deflected away from FASER by the
 1216 LHC magnets. The majority of neutral hadrons are stopped by the TAS and the TAN or in the
 1217 rock preceding FASER. The only standard model particles capable of reaching FASER with large
 1218 fluxes are muons and neutrinos.

1219 An understanding of neutrinos and how they interact in and around FASER [86] is vital for
 1220 understanding the LLP signal and potential background. The flux of neutrinos in the forward region

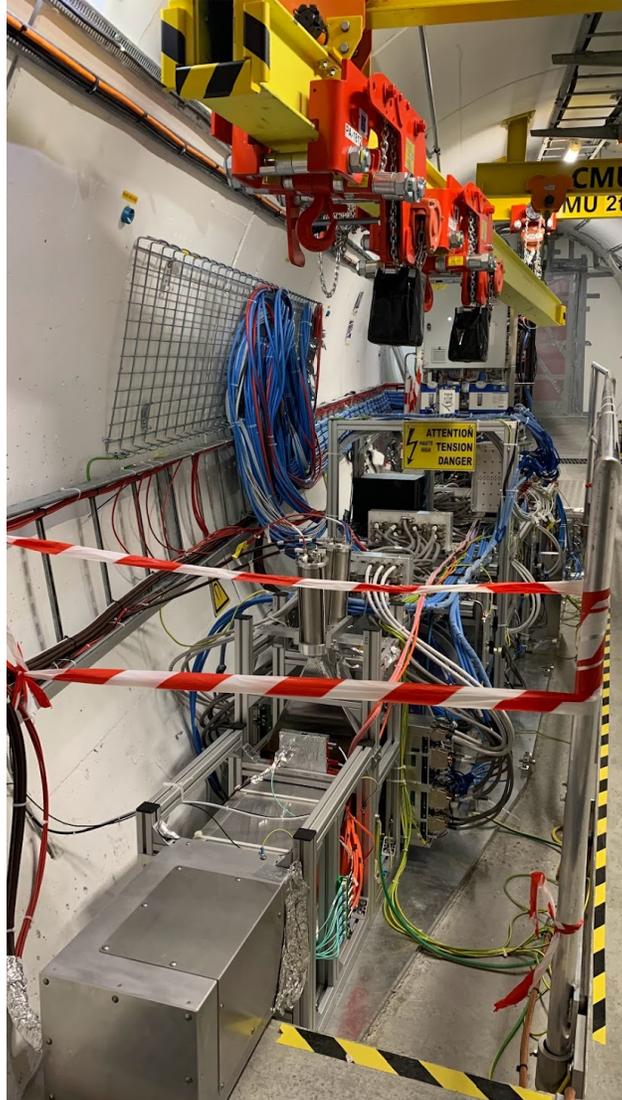


Figure 3.7: FASER in TI12 in January 2023, viewed from the calorimeter towards FASER ν

1221 of the LHC can be considered in three categories: prompt neutrinos, those produced in the decays
1222 of short-lived particles, particularly charm hadrons; displaced neutrinos, produced in the decay of
1223 long-lived light hadrons in the LHC beam pipe before interaction with any material, this refers to
1224 mainly pions and kaons; secondary neutrinos, produced from downstream hadronic showers which
1225 result from interactions of primary hadrons with material upstream of FASER. These are discussed
1226 in more detail in the context of Monte Carlo generators in Chapter 5.

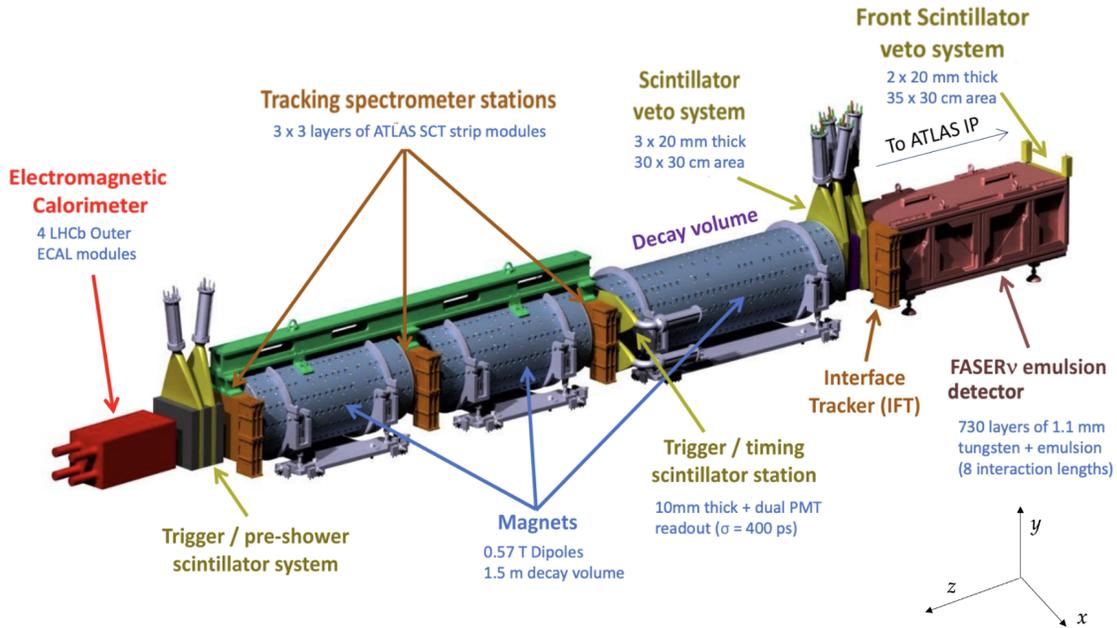


Figure 3.8: The components of the FASER detector. The coordinate system is also shown.

1227 3.3 Detector Components

1228 A recent photograph of FASER in TI12 can be seen in Figure 3.7 and a schematic of the detector
 1229 components is shown in Figure 3.8. The FASER detector is described in detail in Ref. [87]. Particles
 1230 produced at IP1 enter the detector from the right of the diagram in Figure 3.8. FASER is 5 m long
 1231 and has an active radius of 10 cm. The FASER detector uses a cartesian coordinate system with
 1232 the z -axis pointing along the beam collision axis on the LOS away from IP1, the y -axis pointing
 1233 vertically upwards, and the x -axis pointing horizontally towards the LHC machine. The origin
 1234 (0,0) of the coordinate system is aligned with the centre of the magnets in the transverse x - y plane
 1235 and conventionally at the front surface of the second tracker station in the z plane. The angular
 1236 acceptance of FASER is $\theta \lesssim 1$ mrad, where θ is the angle with respect to the beam collision axis.
 1237 The pseudorapidity η is often used instead of θ when discussing angular acceptance, this is defined
 1238 as $\eta = -\ln(\tan\theta/2)$ where $\eta = 0$ would correspond to an angle perpendicular to the beam collision
 1239 axis.

1240 The first component of the detector is the “VetoNu” scintillator system, to veto charged particles

1241 before they enter the detector, this scintillator sits in front of the FASER ν emulsion detector (red).
1242 The FASER ν box is followed by Interface Tracker (IFT), a single tracking station (orange) that
1243 enables track reconstruction in the emulsion. The next component is the “Veto” scintillator station
1244 (yellow) to veto charged particles produced in the FASER ν detector. The veto scintillator layers
1245 are followed by a 0.57 T permanent dipole magnet (blue) which acts as a decay volume for incoming
1246 particles. It has a 10 cm aperture radius and is 1.5 m long; the magnets bend charged particle tracks
1247 in the **y** direction. In the case of highly collimated particle tracks, the magnet provides a horizontal
1248 kick to separate tracks to a detectable distance. There is a third scintillator station for timing
1249 and triggering (yellow); this scintillator, larger in area than the Veto and VetoNu scintillators, is
1250 referred to as the timing scintillator or timing station and sits in front of the tracking spectrometer.
1251 FASER’s tracker consists of three tracking stations (orange) and two 1 m long 0.57 T permanent
1252 dipole magnets. The role of the tracking spectrometer is to observe the characteristic signal of two
1253 oppositely charged particles pointing back to the IP, and measure their momentum. Immediately
1254 following the tracking spectrometer is the preshower detector and scintillator system (yellow), also
1255 used for triggering. The final component is a sampling electromagnetic calorimeter (red) to measure
1256 the total electromagnetic energy of incoming particles.

1257 **3.3.1 FASER ν Emulsion Detector**

1258 FASER ν is a passive emulsion-based neutrino detector. It is made up of emulsion films interleaved
1259 with 770 1 mm-thick tungsten plates which act as a target for neutrino interactions. The FASER ν
1260 detector has a target mass of 1.1 tonnes and has a transverse size of $25 \times 30 \text{ cm}^2$.

1261 The tungsten acts as a target for neutrino interactions and the emulsion films record the tra-
1262 jectories of all charged particles that enter the FASER ν box with excellent position and angular
1263 resolution. It can be used to identify leptons produced in charged-current (CC) neutrino inter-
1264 actions, for example muons are easily characterised by their long tracks that can penetrate up to
1265 the eight interaction lengths that make up the FASER ν detector [87]. FASER ν has measured the
1266 interaction cross section for ν_e and ν_μ , detailed in Ref. [88]. Due to the nature of emulsion, and the
1267 fact that FASER ν is a passive detector, it is necessary to exchange the box before track multiplicity
1268 becomes so high that the ability to distinguish and reconstruct track vertices in the emulsion is
1269 degraded.

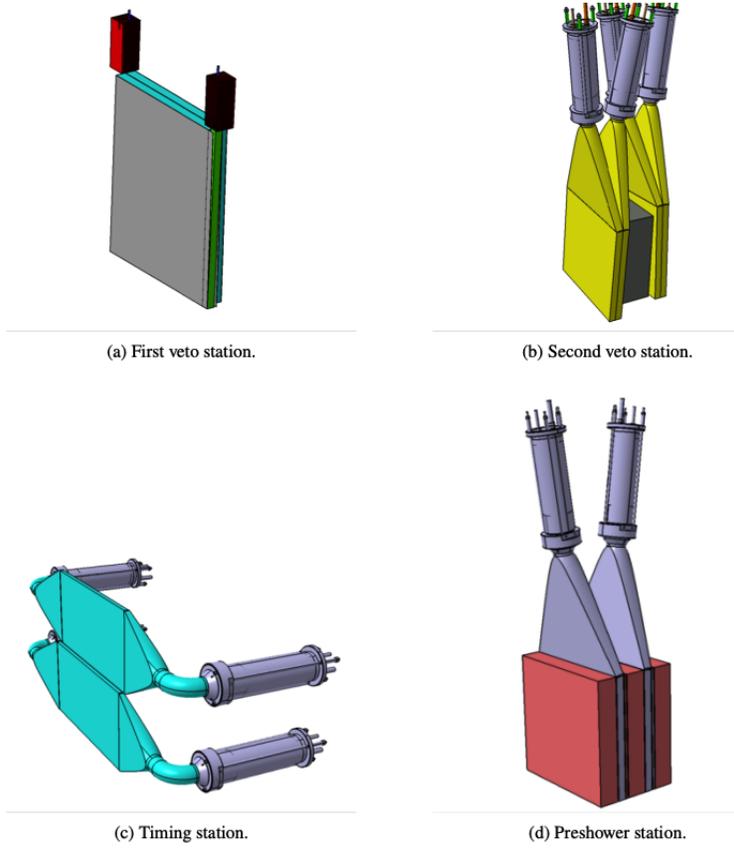


Figure 3.9: The four scintillator stations used in FASER.

1270 The FASER ν emulsion detector is not used in either of the analyses discussed in this thesis.
 1271 However, whilst the tungsten plates do play a role in suppressing potential background, they also
 1272 act as a target for neutrino interactions.

1273 3.3.2 Scintillators

1274 The four scintillator stations within FASER are vital to achieve high detection efficiency. The
 1275 scintillators are used for the vetoing of charged particles and also for triggering purposes. The light
 1276 in each scintillator is transmitted to PMTs (Photomultiplier tubes) through wavelength shifting
 1277 (WLS) rods or plastic light guides, the exact design and setup depends on the location and role of
 1278 the specific scintillator. Each scintillator module, consisting of the scintillator plane, WLS rod/light
 1279 guide and PMT, is wrapped in 0.5 mm-thick foil to avoid light leakage. In front of each PMT is
 1280 an open-ended optical fibre for injecting light pulses for calibration purposes. The arrangement of
 1281 each of the four scintillator stations can be seen in Figure 3.9 [87].

1282 The first scintillator station is placed in front of FASER ν in order to veto charged particles
1283 as they enter the detector. VetoNu is made up of two scintillator layers and its design is unique
1284 compared to the other stations, due to the limited space available in the FASER ν trench. The
1285 two scintillator modules are positioned back to back and each include a 30×35 cm EJ-200 plastic
1286 scintillator which is 2 cm thick and connected via a $1.5 \times 1.5 \times 37.5$ cm EJ-280 plastic WLS rod
1287 [89] to a Hamamatsu H11934-300 PMT [90]. This PMT is a 12 dynode-stage head-on PMT with
1288 a 23 mm sensitive photocathode [87].

1289 The second scintillator station is placed in front of the FASER decay volume, this veto station
1290 has four scintillator layers which form two pairs of modules. Each module in a pair is again placed
1291 back-to-back for increased efficiency. EJ-200 plastic scintillator plates are used, connected via light
1292 guides to Hamamatsu H6410 PMTs [91], these are large 12 dynode-stage head-on PMTs with a
1293 47 mm sensitive aperture. Two layers of permalloy tube protection surround the PMTs to protect
1294 from magnetic fields [87]. The primary role of this second scintillator station is to suppress high
1295 energy muons. To avoid high energy photons due to muon bremsstrahlung entering the FASER
1296 volume undetected, a 10 cm-thick lead block is placed between the two modules to act as an
1297 absorber. Each veto scintillator plane is larger than FASER's active transverse size in order to
1298 more effectively veto charged particles, even those that could enter FASER at large angles. The
1299 total size of the 2 cm-thick scintillator plane in each module is 30×30 cm. The light guide and
1300 PMT are positioned vertically and at slight angles to avoid interference between the neighbouring
1301 PMTs.

1302 FASER sees a rate of 0.4 Hz cm^{-2} muons from IP1. This has been confirmed with in-situ
1303 measurements of the muon flux in TI12 and simulated by FLUKA [92]. The efficiency of the veto
1304 system composed of five scintillator planes has been measured, with each plane showing a muon
1305 veto inefficiency below 10^{-5} using a 40 pC threshold. Within a fiducial selection of 100 mm in the
1306 extrapolated track **x and y** positions, the inefficiency of the entire veto scintillator system is 10^{-27} .
1307 The normalised charge distribution of single track events in the first VetoNu scintillator layer is
1308 shown in Figure 3.10 and the efficiency of each individual veto scintillator layer is shown in Table
1309 3.1.

1310 The third scintillator station is the timing scintillator station which provides trigger and timing
1311 information to FASER, it is located after the decay volume magnet and before the first tracking

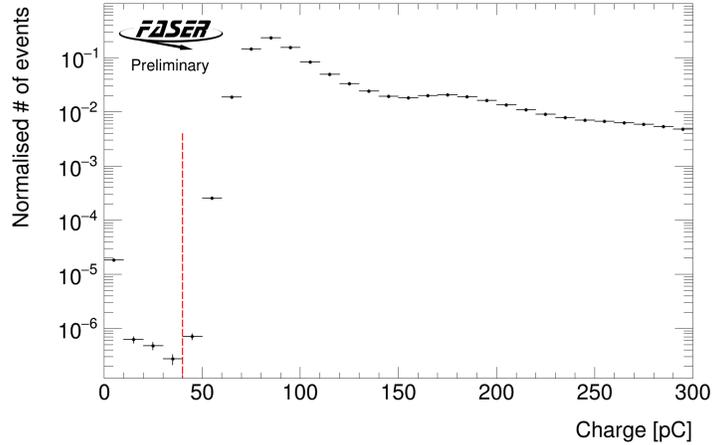


Figure 3.10: Charge deposited in the first layer of the VetoNu scintillator in front of FASER ν in data. Using a 40 pC threshold (indicated by the dotted red line), the measured MIP detection efficiency is 99.99976(2).

Scintillator	Efficiency (%)
VetoNu Layer 0	99.99976(2)
VetoNu Layer 1	99.99974(2)
Veto Layer 0	99.99994(1)
Veto Layer 1	99.999976(7)
Veto Layer 2	99.999982(6)

Table 3.1: The independent efficiencies of each of the five veto scintillators using the 2022 dataset. Veto layer 0 belongs to the first module of the veto scintillator station, veto layers 1 and 2 belong to the second module of the veto scintillator station.

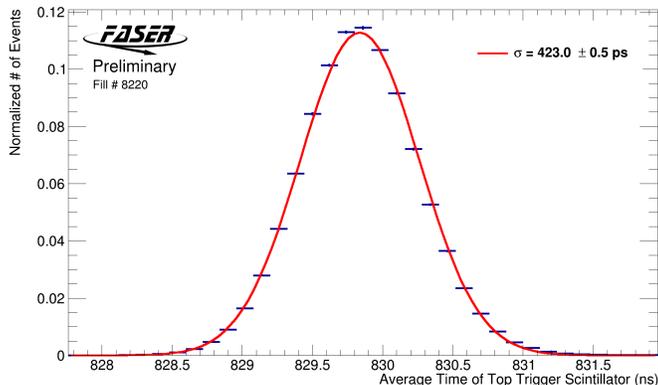


Figure 3.11: The timing distribution of the top timing scintillator with a timing resolution of 423.0 ± 0.5 ps.

1312 station. The timing scintillator station is used to precisely measure the arrival time of physics
 1313 signals with respect to the pp collisions at IP1, this information can be used suppress non-collision
 1314 backgrounds. This station has a larger area than the veto scintillator planes, in order to cover
 1315 the magnet surface and to detect muons that may enter FASER at a large angle after the veto
 1316 scintillators. The timing station is made up of two 1 cm-thick 40×20 cm scintillator layers
 1317 which are stacked vertically with a 5 mm overlap and referred to as the top and bottom timing
 1318 scintillators. Each layer is connected to a Hamamatsu H6410 PMT via light guides that are bent
 1319 at 90° to minimize size due to limited space in the trench. The total charge deposited in the
 1320 timing scintillator is a combination of the charge deposited in each of the two layers. The timing
 1321 distribution of the top timing scintillator is shown in Figure 3.11; the top timing station has a
 1322 timing resolution of 423.0 ± 0.5 ps, the resolution of the bottom timing scintillator is similar.

1323 The fourth and final scintillator station is part of the preshower detector; it can be used as an
 1324 additional trigger station and can also provide coincidence triggering to reduce the rate of non-
 1325 physics triggers [87]. The preshower detector is located after the final tracking station and before
 1326 the calorimeter and is shown in Figure 3.13. It is made up of two 20 mm-thick scintillator planes
 1327 which form the active sensor component. Each scintillator layer is preceded by a 3.18 mm-thick
 1328 sheet of tungsten that acts as an absorber and aids the development of particle showers. The
 1329 absorbers correspond to roughly one radiation length. Graphite blocks are interleaved before and
 1330 after the preshower layers to minimise the back-splash of activity in the calorimeter leaving signal

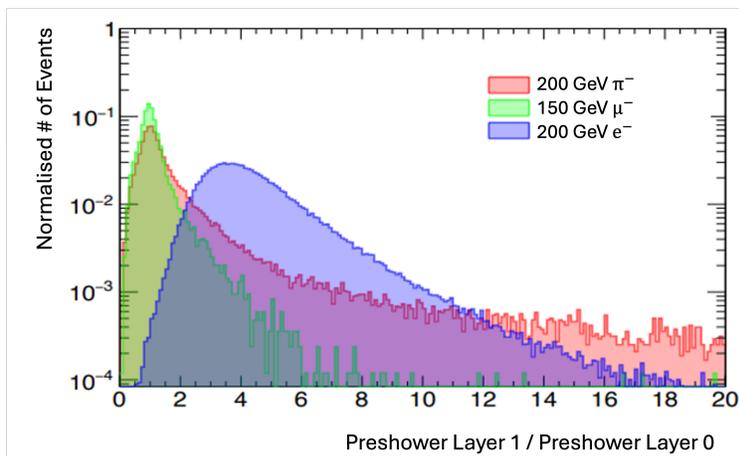


Figure 3.12: The ratio of charge deposited in the two preshower scintillator layers for a 200 GeV π^- , a 150 GeV μ^- and a 200 GeV e^- from test beam data. Calculated in terms of the equivalent number of MIPs.

1331 in the preshower scintillators or the final layer of the tracker. The geometry of the preshower
 1332 detector is shown in Figure 3.14; in total, the preshower detector has around 2.5 radiation lengths
 1333 of material. The two preshower scintillator layers are referred to as preshower layer 0 and preshower
 1334 layer 1. Preshower layer 0 is the first and most upstream scintillator. The role of the preshower is to
 1335 cause showering of electromagnetic interactions that otherwise would not be distinguishable from
 1336 other similar signals in the calorimeter, which lacks spatial resolution. In addition, the ratio of the
 1337 charge deposited in preshower layer 0 and preshower layer 1 can be used for particle identification
 1338 (PID). [Figure 3.12](#) shows the ratio of charge deposited in preshower layers for a 200 GeV π^- , a 150
 1339 GeV μ^- and a 200 GeV e^- from test beam data.

1340 There is a planned upgrade of the preshower detector, to be installed in TI12 in the 2024 [Year](#)
 1341 [End Technical Stop \(YETS\)](#). Details of the upgraded preshower detector are given in Chapter 8.

1342 3.3.3 Tracking Spectrometer

1343 FASER has four tracking stations, with three layers per station. There are three stations situated
 1344 downstream that make up the tracking spectrometer and one station upstream that is the Interface
 1345 Tracker (IFT) used [by](#) FASER ν . The FASER tracking stations have three planes which each have
 1346 eight double-sided silicon microstrip modules with a resolution ($x \times y$) of $580\mu\text{m} \times 17\mu\text{m}$. The
 1347 average hit efficiency across the full tracker is $99.64 \pm 0.10 \%$, this is shown in [Figure 3.15](#) as a

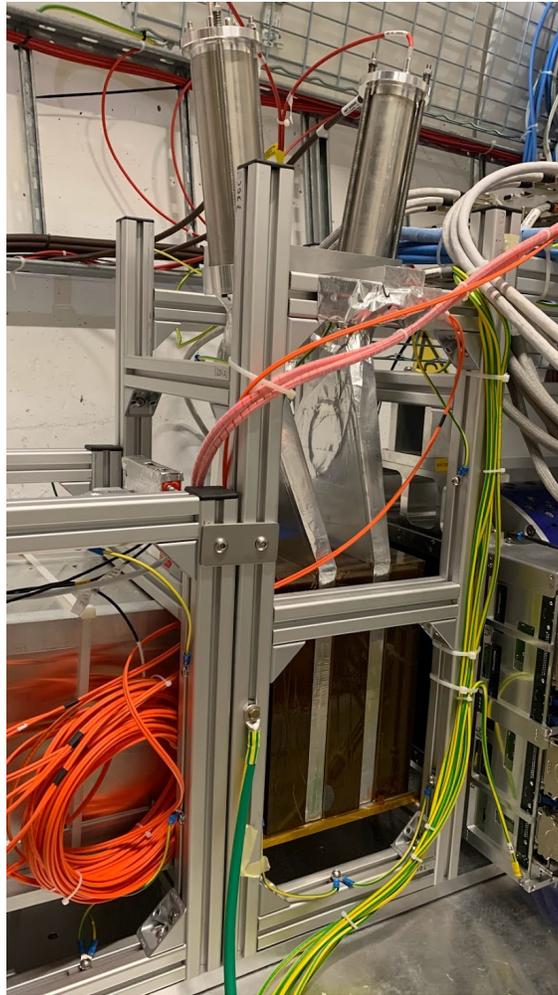


Figure 3.13: The current FASER preshower detector, January 2023.

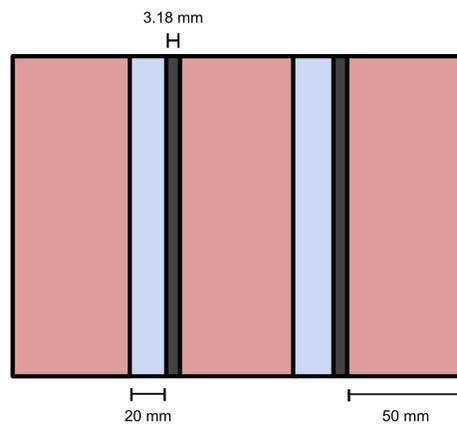


Figure 3.14: A schematic of the current preshower detector: 50 mm graphite blocks, 20 mm plastic scintillator layers, 3.18 mm tungsten absorber.

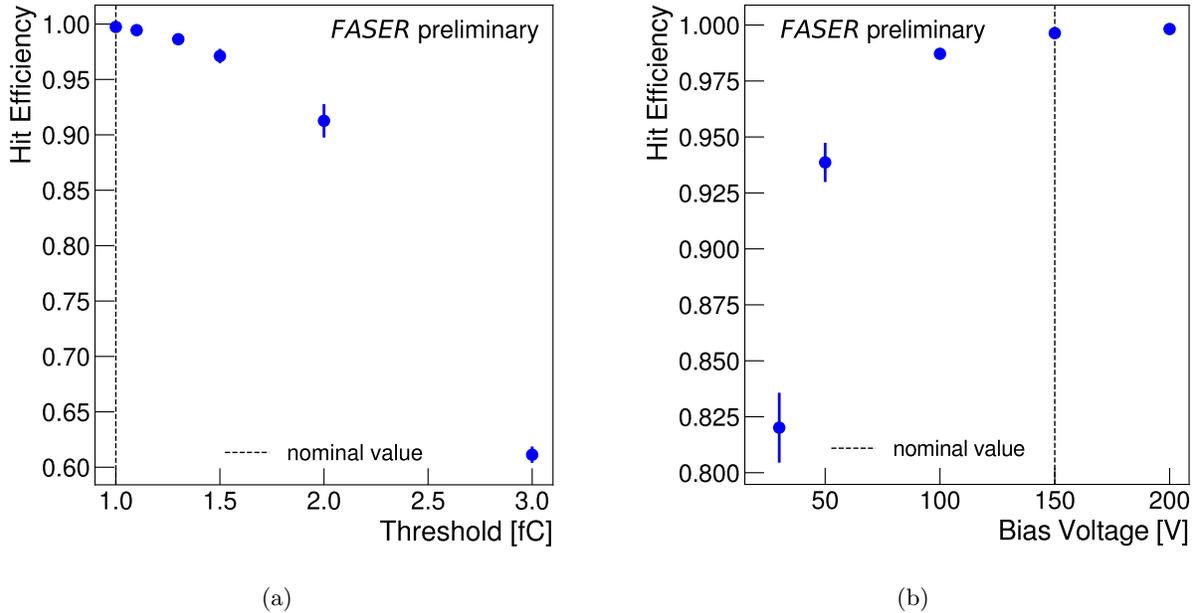


Figure 3.15: The hit efficiency as a function of a) the applied hit threshold (in fC) and b) the applied bias voltage (in V) for the FASER silicon strip (SCT) tracker. The nominal settings are indicated as as a dashed line, and yields an average hit efficiency across the full tracker of 99.64 ± 0.10 %.

1348 function of applied hit threshold and as a function of applied bias voltage. The nominal settings
 1349 for threshold and voltage in the tracker are 1 fC and 150 V, respectively.

1350 The modules used in the tracker are spare barrel SCT (Semiconductor Tracker) modules from
 1351 ATLAS [93] and consist of four single-sided silicon microstrip sensors that are glued in pairs on each
 1352 side of the central baseboard, resulting in the double-sided module. On top of one of the sensors in
 1353 the pair is a copper/polyimide hybrid that provides the readout electronics. Each sensor is $64 \times$
 1354 63.6 mm^2 and has 768 readout strips. The silicon strips are the sensitive element of the SCT sensor,
 1355 readout of the 128 strip channels is done by ATLAS ASIC readout chips [94]. Figure 3.16 shows
 1356 an SCT barrel module inside an aluminium test-box. Spatial resolution of $17 \mu\text{m}$ perpendicular to
 1357 the strips, and $580 \mu\text{m}$ parallel to the strips is provided by the 40 mrad stereo angle between the
 1358 front and back pairs of sensors.

1359 The eight SCT modules are shown in Figure 3.17 [93] for a single tracker plane, they are held
 1360 in place by an aluminium frame and arranged with four modules on each side. The modules are
 1361 oriented with the strip perpendicular to the y -axis so that the momentum of charged particles that

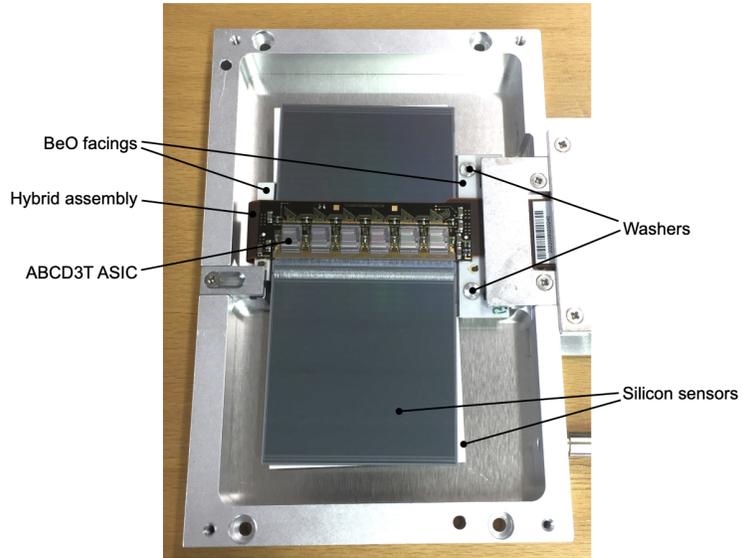


Figure 3.16: SCT barrel module inside an aluminium test-box.

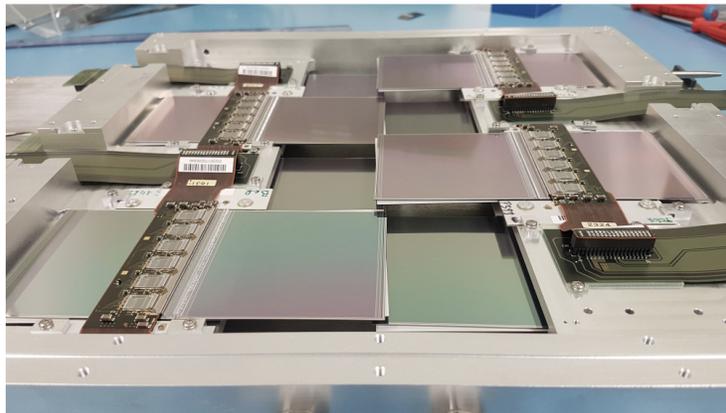


Figure 3.17: A tracker plane with all eight SCT barrel modules.

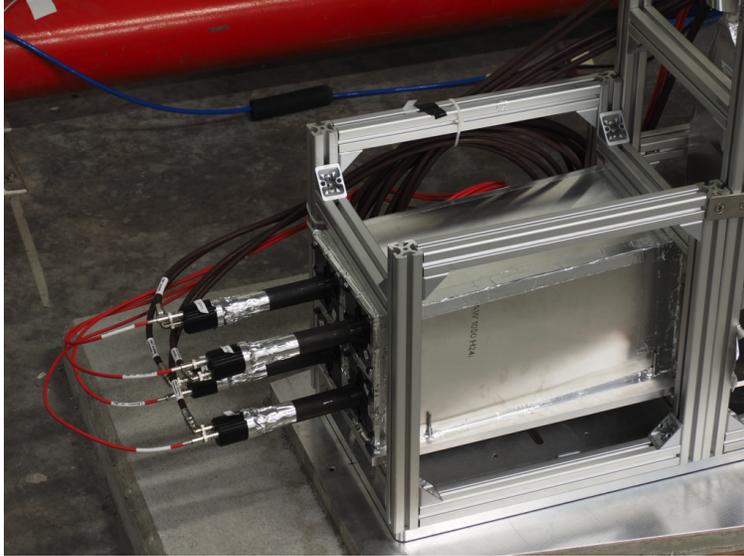


Figure 3.18: Arrangement of the 4 FASER calorimeter modules in a 2×2 configuration before additional shielding and dual readout PMTs were added.

1362 are separated by the magnetic field can be measured. The distance between the modules is 2.4 mm
 1363 to achieve an active area overlap of 2 mm in order to avoid gaps. The overall active area of the
 1364 tracker plane is 240×240 mm, which covers the 200 mm-diameter magnet aperture of FASER.

1365 3.3.4 Electromagnetic Calorimeter

1366 The FASER sampling EM calorimeter is made of four LHCb outer ECAL modules arranged as
 1367 shown in Figure 3.18 [87]. Each module is 754 mm long, including the PMT and has a transverse
 1368 size of 121.2×121.2 mm. The four modules are separated by a gap of 0.2 mm between the top
 1369 and bottom modules and approximately 1.2 mm between the left and right modules. There is a
 1370 50 mrad tilt to the calorimeter in the horizontal plane towards the positive x direction. This tilt
 1371 is to ensure particles are entering the ECAL modules rather than the gap. Each module features
 1372 66 alternating layers of 2 mm lead absorber and 4 mm plastic scintillator, this is shown in Figure
 1373 3.19. Between the lead and scintillator is a very thin layer of TYVEK paper ($120 \mu\text{m}$), in total
 1374 each cell corresponds to 25 radiation lengths.

1375 The ECAL modules are “Shashlik-type” modules with WLS fibres that penetrate the entire
 1376 module. These WLS fibres deliver light to a single Hamamatsu R7899-20 PMT [95] at the rear
 1377 centre of the calorimeter modules. This PMT is a ten dynode-stage head-on PMT custom built for

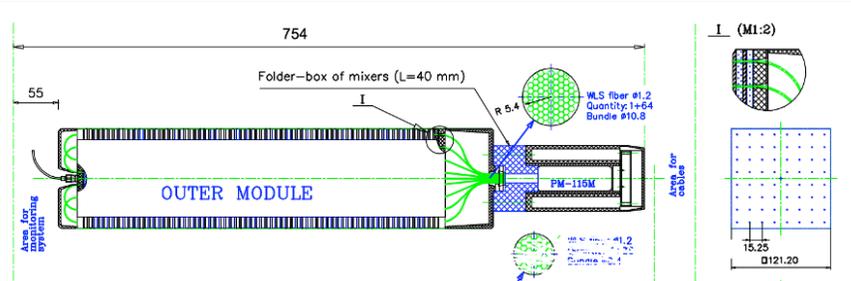


Figure 3.19: Design of the LHCb outer ECAL modules used for FASER.

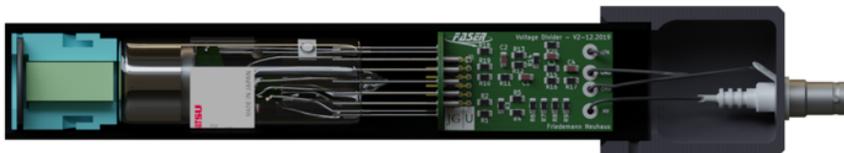


Figure 3.20: A FASER calorimeter Hamamatsu R7899-20 PMT.

1378 FASER with a voltage-divider to ensure good linearity in the case of large pulses [87]. The voltage
 1379 divider and PMT sit in a steel tube, shown in Figure 3.20, with additional permalloy protection
 1380 surrounding it to reduce the effect of magnetic fields. In front of the tube is a 32×8 mm polystyrene
 1381 light mixer which reduces the non-uniformity of the PMT response. In addition, optical filters can
 1382 be placed in front of the PMTs to reduce their transmission efficiency to 10%; this allows for the
 1383 calorimeter to be operated at a higher gain where the non-linearity is reduced, without causing
 1384 saturation of $\mathcal{O}(\text{TeV})$ signals. In fact, to overcome the compromise between running in low or high
 1385 gain mode, the calorimeter PMTs were upgraded in December 2023 to allow for dual readout. A
 1386 schematic of this new setup, which allows for measurements to be taken in both high and low gain,
 1387 and requires an additional digitiser to provide enough channels, is shown in Figure 3.21. However,
 1388 the analyses discussed in this thesis, only use data taken with the calorimeter in low gain mode.

1389 3.4 Trigger and Data Acquisition

1390 The trigger and data acquisition (TDAQ) system is designed to maximise robustness and stability
 1391 during data taking to ensure that data is recorded with high efficiency [96]. For nominal physics
 1392 running FASER records data from runs taken with optical filters installed in the calorimeter,
 1393 as described in Section 3.3.4 and with the calorimeter readout in low gain mode. This is to
 1394 ensure that high energy deposits do not saturate the calorimeter. Due to its location on the

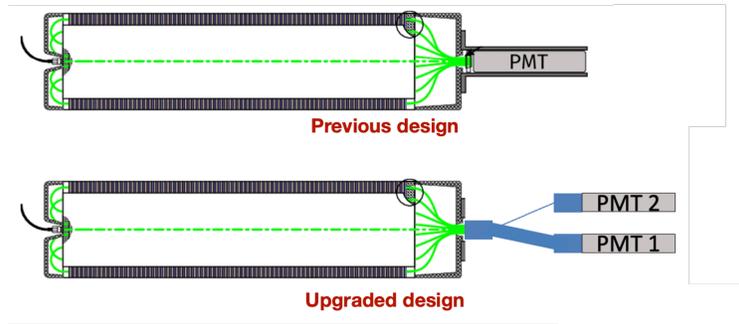


Figure 3.21: Dual readout upgrade for the calorimeter PMTs in YETS 2023. PMT 1 has a “low” energy range of 0.1 to 300 GeV. PMT 2 has a “high” energy range of 3 to 3000 GeV. The region of overlap is useful for cross calibrations.

1395 LOS, FASER is designed to be operated completely remotely since there is significant amount of
 1396 time during data taking that TI12 is inaccessible. FASER does not have a dedicated experimental
 1397 cavern or physical control room, therefore, monitoring that gives a detailed overview and control
 1398 of all detector systems, in addition to reliable recording of FASER’s raw data, is vital. FASER
 1399 employs a operations schedule with a weekly run manager to coordinate detector operations, plan
 1400 access to TI12 and perform calibrations of the tracker and calorimeter. A weekly shifter monitors
 1401 the performance of each component of the detector, checks the cooling systems and reports any
 1402 fluctuations outside of nominal running.

1403 Figure 3.22 [96] gives an overview of the FASER TDAQ architecture; the number in brackets
 1404 is the number of channels used for readout. The calorimeter and scintillators are readout by a
 1405 CAEN digitiser. The tracker stations are readout by the Tracker Readout Board (TRB). These
 1406 communicate with the Trigger Logic Board (TLB) which, via Ethernet connection, sends the raw
 1407 data to data acquisition and storage. The TLB also generates and assigns each event with a bunch
 1408 counter ID (BCID), this indicates the number of clock cycles that have passed between the last
 1409 BCR (bunch counter reset signal, generated by the TLB on every LHC orbit signal [96]) and the
 1410 trigger signal. Therefore, one can define an event with a colliding BCID as an event within ± 1
 1411 BCID of a collision.

1412 The CAEN digitiser provides eight trigger outputs to the TLB: VetoNu, 1stVeto, 2ndVeto,
 1413 TimingTop, TimingBottom, Preshower, CaloBottom, CaloTop. In the case of the calorimeter and
 1414 scintillators, where a pair of PMTs is used in the trigger definition, “and/or” logic is used. The
 1415 definitions of the eight trigger outputs are given in Table 3.2. For 2022 and 2023 data taking, the

Table 3.2: The definitions of the eight trigger outputs used in FASER.

Trigger Output	Digitiser Logic Definition
VetoNu	VetoNu PMT 1 and VetoNu PMT 2
1stVeto	First Veto Layer PMT 1 (PMT 2 not connected to digitiser)
2ndVeto	Second Veto Layer PMT 1 and Second Veto Layer PMT 2
TimingTop	Timing Layer Top Left PMT and Timing Layer Top Right PMT
TimingBottom	Timing Layer Bottom Left PMT and Timing Layer Bottom Right PMT
Preshower	First Preshower Layer PMT and Second Preshower Layer PMT
CaloBottom	Calorimeter Bottom PMT 1 (Module 0) or Calorimeter Bottom Module PMT 2 (Module 1)
CaloTop	Calorimeter Top PMT 1 (Module 2) or Calorimeter Top Module PMT 2 (Module 3)

Table 3.3: Trigger items that combine the eight trigger outputs.

Trigger Item	Trigger Output Combination
Scintillator Trigger	VetoNu OR 1stVeto OR 2ndVeto OR Preshower
Timing Trigger	TimingTop OR TimingBottom
Calo Trigger	CaloTop OR CaloBottom
Coincidence Trigger	(VetoNu OR 1stVeto OR 2ndVeto) AND Preshower

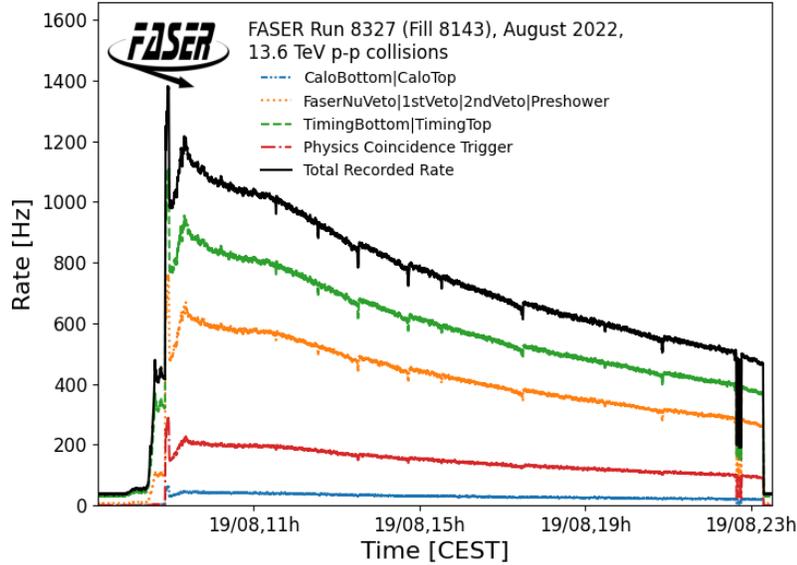
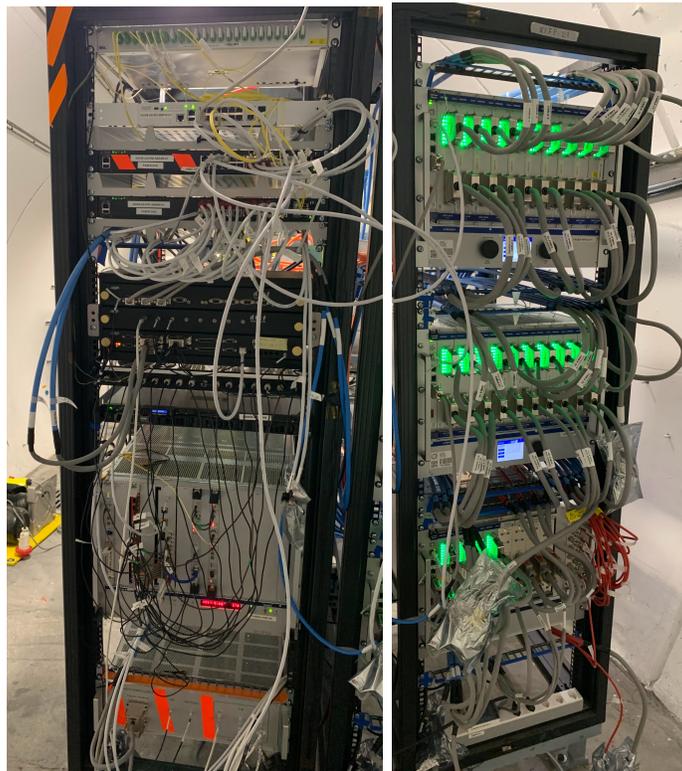


Figure 3.23: FASER recorded trigger rate for individual items and total recorded rate (black) for LHC Fill 8143 on 19th August 2022. Trigger items: timing scintillator (green), signal in any veto or preshower scintillators (orange), coincidence trigger between FASER ν veto and preshower (red), calorimeter (blue).



(a)

(b)

Figure 3.24: DAQ electronics in TI12, January 2023.

1422 Chapter 4

1423 Event and Object Reconstruction

1424 This chapter provides details of the steps required for event reconstruction. It also discusses
1425 calorimetry and important methods regarding measurement of the energy response and resolution.

1426 4.1 Event Reconstruction

1427 Event reconstruction takes the raw data read from the tracking spectrometer, scintillator PMTs and
1428 calorimeter module PMTs and makes the data available for physics analysis. Charged particles will
1429 deposit some amount of charge in the VetoNu, Veto and timing scintillator layers, leave tracks in the
1430 spectrometer and energy deposits in the preshower scintillators and calorimeter. Neutral particles
1431 will leave no signal in the upstream scintillators or the spectrometer but still deposit energy in
1432 the preshower and calorimeter. Event reconstruction, as well as simulation and digitisation, is
1433 performed in FASER's Calypso offline software framework [97] based on the ATLAS Athena [98]
1434 and LHCb GAUDI [99] frameworks.

1435 4.1.1 Track Reconstruction

1436 The detection and reconstruction of tracks within the tracking spectrometer is vital in suppressing
1437 potential backgrounds and for identifying certain LLP signals in physics analyses, for example in the
1438 case of the dark photon. Track reconstruction also plays a vital role in the rejection of background,
1439 especially considering the large flux of muons which traverse FASER. Successful reconstruction of
1440 particle tracks from the raw data collected in the SCT strips is performed in a number of steps

Table 4.1: Descriptions of the different steps used in the reconstruction of full tracks within FASER’s tracking spectrometer.

Name	Definition	Description
Hit	Charge deposits in a single SCT strip above a threshold	A signal detected in the sensitive element of the SCT module sensors
Cluster	Adjacent hits in neighbouring SCT modules	Clusters give the total charge of groups of SCT strips that see a signal
Spacepoint	The global 3D position of clusters on both sides of an SCT module	Using the stereo-angle between clusters on the front and back of a module and combining with the global position of the SCT module in the aligned geometry
Segment	Partially reconstructed track in a single tracking station	A fit of all spacepoints in individual tracking layers in an SCT module. Segments must have an \bar{x} -angle ≤ 0.08 rad, indicating a straight track
Full Track	A fully reconstructed track that traverses the full spectrometer	The track segments are used as seeds in a Kalman filter within the ACTS library

1441 which take the hits in the tracker and finally form full tracks. The stages in track reconstruction
 1442 are defined in Table 4.1.

1443 A hit in the tracker is recorded when the amount of charge deposited in a single strip is above
 1444 a certain threshold. A cluster can therefore be defined as adjacent strips on one side of the SCT
 1445 module, since clusters can only form on a single side of a module the cluster position is only based
 1446 on the precision local coordinate \hat{y} . The position of a cluster is defined by the charge-weighted
 1447 position of the hits. A spacepoint defines the global 3D position of a track, providing the local \hat{x}
 1448 position of clusters on two sides of a module using the stereo angle between them and combining this
 1449 with the global position of the SCT module in the aligned geometry. All spacepoints in the three
 1450 individual layers within a given SCT module are linearly fitted to form track segments that could
 1451 potentially form a full track within the full tracking spectrometer. The maximum x -angle that a
 1452 track segment can have and still be considered part of a straight track capable of traversing the full
 1453 spectrometer, is 0.08 rad. Any track segment with an x -angle above this threshold is discarded. If
 1454 a track segment shares over 60% of its clusters with another segment, only the track segment with
 1455 the smallest χ^2 is kept. This requirement avoids overlapping segments. The track segments are
 1456 used as seeds in a Kalman filter [100] within the ACTS library [101] which takes into account the
 1457 detector material and the effect of the magnetic field in the spectrometer.

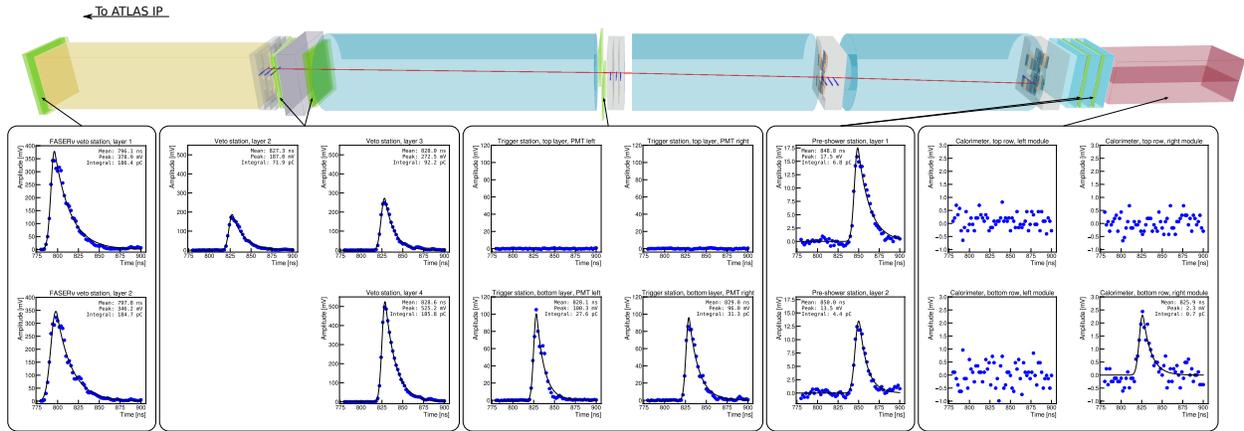


Figure 4.1: An event display showing a collision event of a muon traversing the FASER detector. The measured track momentum is 21.9 GeV. The waveforms are shown for signals in scintillator counters and calorimeter modules and are fitted using a Crystal Ball function. All PMT waveforms are consistent with a muon passing through the scintillators and one of the calorimeter modules. The event has been triggered by modules in the VetoNu scintillator station, veto scintillator station and timing scintillator station with pulses above 25 mV, and by modules in the preshower station with pulses above above 3 mV. The detected hits in the SCT modules are shown with blue lines and the reconstructed track is shown with a red line. In the title of the waveform plots, left and right is defined facing the downstream direction.

1458 Figure 4.1 shows a reconstructed track from a muon traversing FASER. The hits in the SCT
 1459 modules are represented by the horizontal blue lines, the reconstructed full track is shown with
 1460 the red line, traversing all three tracking stations in the spectrometer. This muon has a track
 1461 momentum of 21.9 GeV.

1462 4.1.2 PMT Waveform Reconstruction

1463 Physics data readout from FASER’s scintillators and calorimeter are in the form of digitised in-
 1464 formation produced by analog-to-digital converters (ADCs). An ADC converts a physics signal,
 1465 for example the integrated charge readout by a PMT, into a finite number of bits that represent
 1466 the size/amplitude of said physics signal. Steps must be taken, including inverting the raw wave-
 1467 form and subtracting the baseline noise of the signal, to produce reconstructed waveforms that are
 1468 prepared for physics analysis.

1469 The first step of the offline reconstruction process involves pedestal subtraction of the baseline
 1470 noise and inversion of the negative ADC pulse. An example of a raw PMT waveform readout

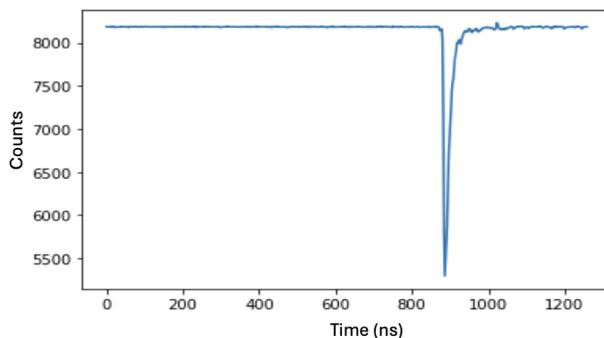
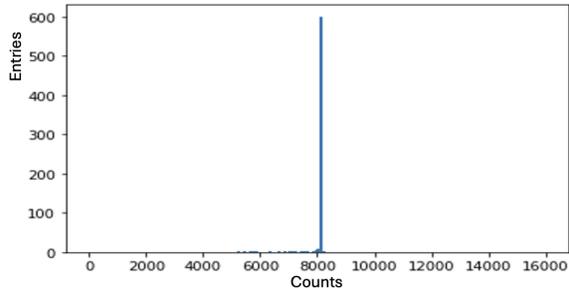


Figure 4.2: A example of a typical PMT raw waveform signal coming from the digitiser. Waveforms have a window of 1200 ns, with 2 ns bins and a negative amplitude of ADC counts.

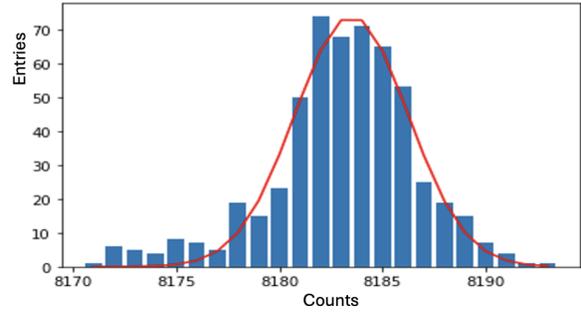
1471 from the digitiser is shown in Figure 4.2. The digitiser has a 2 V range with a 14 bit readout,
 1472 resulting in a 0.122 mV/ADC conversion factor. For the baseline subtraction, the distribution of
 1473 the ADC counts is fitted with a Gaussian fit to obtain the most common value, this process is shown
 1474 in Figure 4.3. The length of the waveform is large in comparison to the signal pulse, therefore,
 1475 the most common value obtained from the fit corresponds to the baseline noise. The measured
 1476 baseline mean is subtracted from the raw waveform **and then the signal inverted**, in order to get a
 1477 baseline-subtracted positive pulse which can be used in reconstruction.

1478 Figure 4.4a shows the resulting waveform, within a 120 ns reconstruction window either side of
 1479 the expected trigger time, fitted with a Crystal Ball function. The fit is defined in Section 4.2.1.
 1480 This allows extraction of the mean, peak and integral of the distribution. This is converted into
 1481 deposited charge according to the ADC conversion 0.122 mV/ADC. **Figure 4.4b shows a failed fit**
 1482 **of a saturated waveform pulse, in this case it is preferable to use the raw charge extracted from**
 1483 **the distribution rather than the fitted value.** Figure 4.5 shows a reconstructed waveform of a high
 1484 energy signal in the bottom right calorimeter module.

1485 **Figure 4.1 shows an event display of the full FASER detector geometry and** the reconstructed
 1486 PMT waveforms from a collision event with a muon traversing FASER. The event was triggered
 1487 by pulses in the VetoNu scintillator, Veto scintillator and timing scintillator above 25 mV, and by
 1488 pulses in the preshower station above 3 mV.

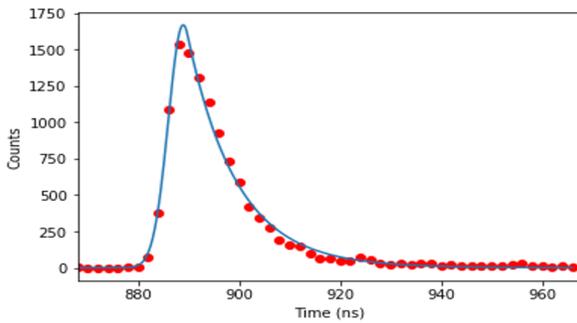


(a)

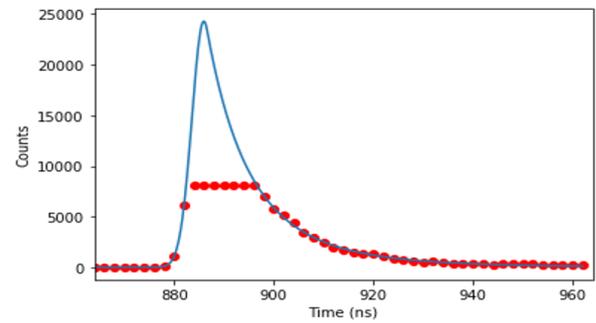


(b)

Figure 4.3: (a) The distribution of ADC counts for a PMT waveform (b) A Gaussian fit of the zoomed in ADC histogram range.



(a)



(b)

Figure 4.4: (a) A example of a typical PMT raw waveform signal coming from the digitiser. Waveforms have a window of 1200 ns, with 2 ns bins and a negative amplitude of ADC counts. (b) An example of a saturated waveform pulse.

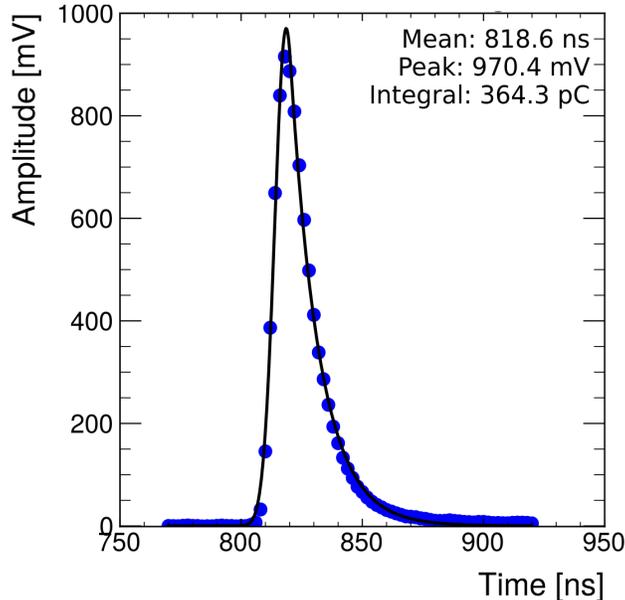


Figure 4.5: A example of a reconstructed waveform in the bottom right ECAL module.

1489 4.2 Calorimeter Response

1490 This section discusses the response and simulation of FASER’s calorimeter, including investigations
 1491 into the most realistic setup and corrections applied to the material description and geometry. The
 1492 energy resolution of a calorimeter is discussed in the context of the ECAL simulation, using results
 1493 from the FASER 2021 calorimeter test beam. Full details of the test beam are presented in Chapter
 1494 8.

1495 Sampling EM calorimeters, such as FASER’s, are designed to absorb high-energy electrons and
 1496 photons and measure their energies through electromagnetic interactions such as bremsstrahlung
 1497 and pair production. This is a destructive process which does not apply to muons or neutrinos that
 1498 can penetrate significant amounts of material.

1499 When the charged particles such as electrons or neutral particles such as photons interact with
 1500 the EM calorimeter, the resulting EM showers are relatively compact and have a short shower
 1501 depth, ideal for a detector the size of FASER. The size and shape of the shower is governed by the
 1502 radiation length, defined as the mean length (in cm) to reduce the energy of an electron interacting
 1503 with the EM calorimeter by a factor of $1/e$ [102] and depends on the material of the calorimeter,
 1504 the density, and the energy loss of the incoming interacting particles. Charged particles lose energy

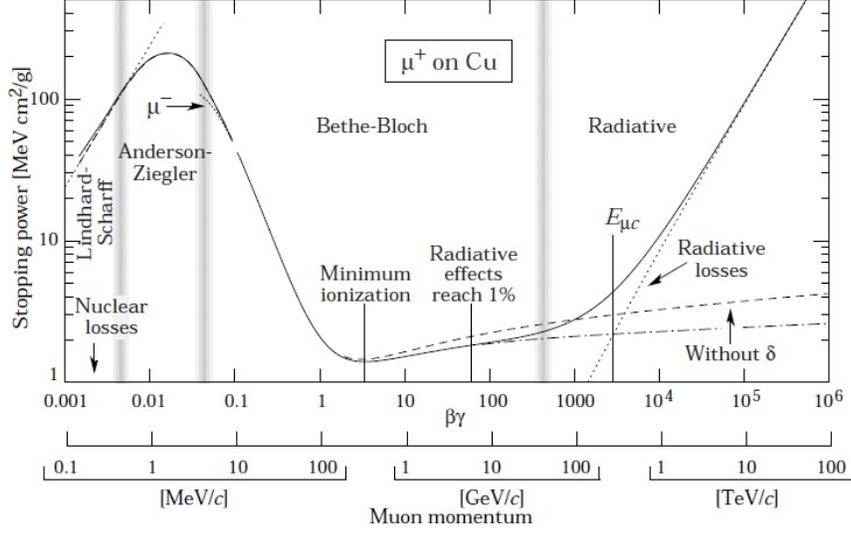


Figure 4.6: The energy loss for positive muons according to the Bethe-Bloch formula (shown between the second and third grey band. The rest of the plot shows other models).

1505 by ionisation according to the Bethe-Bloch equation [4]:

$$\left\langle -\frac{dE}{dx} \right\rangle = K z^2 \frac{Z}{A} \frac{1}{\beta^2} \left[\frac{1}{2} \ln \frac{2m_e c^2 \beta^2 \gamma^2 W_{max}}{I^2} - \beta^2 - \frac{\delta(\beta\gamma)}{2} \right] \quad (4.1)$$

1506 where W_{max} is the maximum energy transfer possible in a single collision, I is the mean excitation
 1507 energy, $\beta = v/c$, e is electron charge and m_e is the electron rest mass, $K = 4\pi N_A r_e^2 m_e c^2$, z is the
 1508 charge number q/e , Z is the atomic number of the absorber, A is the atomic mass of the absorber.

1509 Conversely, muons are considered minimum ionising particles (MIPs) which do not lose much
 1510 energy in the calorimeter. Figure 4.6 [103] illustrates the energy loss of muons according to the
 1511 Bethe-Bloch formula, ionisation dominates in the MeV to TeV energy range.

1512 4.2.1 Energy Response

1513 Not all the energy of an incident particle is deposited in the calorimeter, as there are also absorber
 1514 layers which degrade the signal. The fraction of energy effectively reconstructed by the calorimeter
 1515 needs to be estimated and then corrected to achieve the total calorimeter EM energy of an event.

1516 One of the functions believed to best reflect the behaviour of an electron depositing energy

1517 in a calorimeter, and therefore best fit the spectrum of deposited energy, is the Crystal Ball ()
 1518 function. The function was developed to describe the distribution of energy deposited by electrons
 1519 or photons, however, it does not allow the extraction of the initial particle energy.

1520 The is made up of a Gaussian peak and a power-law tail, giving it an asymmetry compared to
 1521 the standard Gaussian. The function is given by [104]:

$$f_{CB}(x : \mu, \sigma, \alpha, n) = N \begin{cases} e^{-\frac{(x-\mu)^2}{2\sigma^2}}, & \text{for } \frac{x-\mu}{\sigma} > -\alpha \\ A \left(\frac{n}{|\alpha|} - |\alpha| - \frac{x-\mu}{\sigma} \right)^{-n}, & \text{for } \frac{x-\mu}{\sigma} \leq -\alpha \end{cases} \quad (4.2)$$

1522 where $A = \left(\frac{n}{|\alpha|} \right)^n e^{-\frac{|\alpha|^2}{2}}$ and where μ and σ are the mean and standard deviation of the Gaussian
 1523 peak, n is the exponent of the tail function, α represents a parameterisation of the Gaussian and
 1524 tail function, and N is the normalization factor. The μ and σ parameters are typically used to
 1525 study the energy scale and energy resolution of a calorimeter.

1526 The distribution best believed to describe the fluctuations of energy loss due to a minimum
 1527 ionising particle (MIP), such as a muon, passing through matter is the Landau distribution [105].
 1528 This distribution resembles a Gaussian with a long upper tail and gives the probability that the
 1529 particle loses energy δ whilst traversing x :

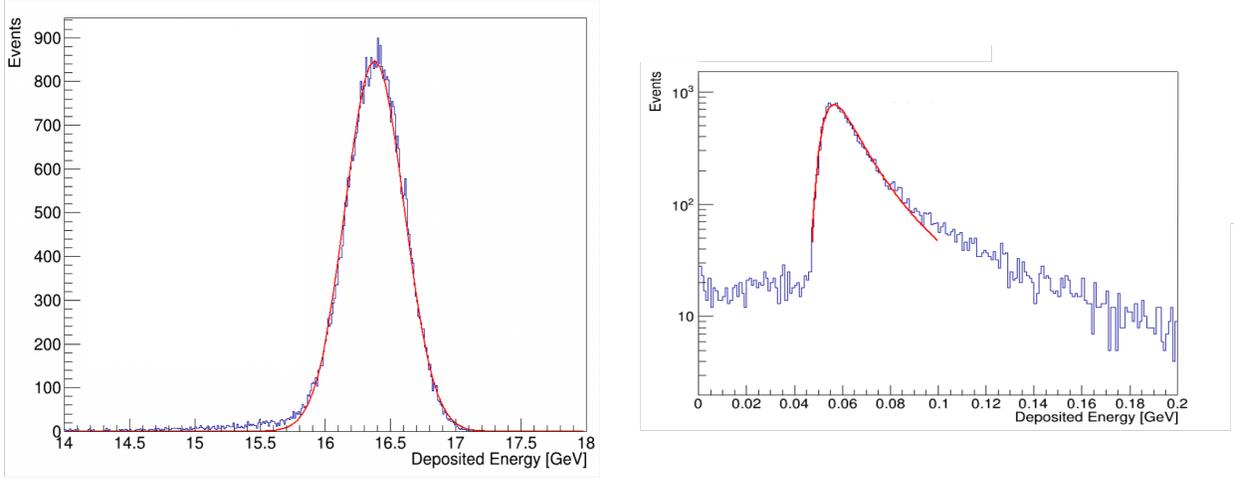
$$f_l(x, \delta) = \frac{\phi(\lambda)}{\zeta} \quad (4.3)$$

1530 where $\phi(\lambda)$ is the Landau function and λ is Landau's universal variable given by:

$$\lambda = \frac{1}{\zeta}(\delta - \langle \delta \rangle) - \beta^2 - \ln \left(\frac{\zeta}{E_m} \right) - 1 + \gamma_E \quad (4.4)$$

1531 where ζ is an approximation of the energy loss and γ_E is Euler's constant. The energy loss cor-
 1532 responding to the maximum of $f_l(x, \delta)$ is the mean most probable energy loss, referred to as the
 1533 most probable value (MPV).

1534 Figure 4.7 shows fitted MC distribution for a 100 GeV electron fitted with a function and a
 1535 100 GeV muon fitted with a Landau distribution, simulated in FASER's ECAL. As expected for a
 1536 MIP, a very small fraction of the muon's total energy is deposited in the calorimeter. An electron



(a)

(b)

Figure 4.7: Fitted MC distribution for (a) a 100 GeV electron fitted with a function (b) a 100 GeV muon fitted with a Landau distribution simulated in FASER's ECAL

1537 is expected to deposit roughly 16.5% of beam energy in FASER's calorimeter.

1538 4.2.2 Corrections and Local Effects

1539 Since FASER uses outer ECAL modules from LHCb, comparison with their results is useful, par-
 1540 ticularly when comparing the energy response and local calorimeter effects. Understanding these
 1541 effects is necessary to implement a realistic simulation. In addition, accurate simulation of the exact
 1542 material used in FASER can have a large impact on the simulated energy response. This section will
 1543 explore the impact of implementing Birks' law correction and non-uniformities in light-collection
 1544 efficiency in order to build a realistic simulation of FASER's ECAL.

1545 Birks' Law is an empirical formula for the light yield per path length as a function of energy
 1546 loss per path length, for a particle traversing a scintillator [106]. It is not linear at high loss rates
 1547 and decreases the energy deposited by around 3%. The correction factor applied to the energy loss,
 1548 dL/dx , is given by:

$$\frac{dL}{dx} = \frac{1}{1 + \left(c_1 * \frac{dE}{dx} / \rho + c_2 * \left(\frac{dE}{dx} / \rho \right)^2 \right)} \quad (4.5)$$

1549 where $c_1 = 0.013 \text{ gMeV}^{-1}\text{cm}^{-2}$, $c_2 = 9.6 \times 10^{-6} \text{ g}^2\text{MeV}^{-2}\text{cm}^{-4}$, ρ is the density in gcm^{-3} and

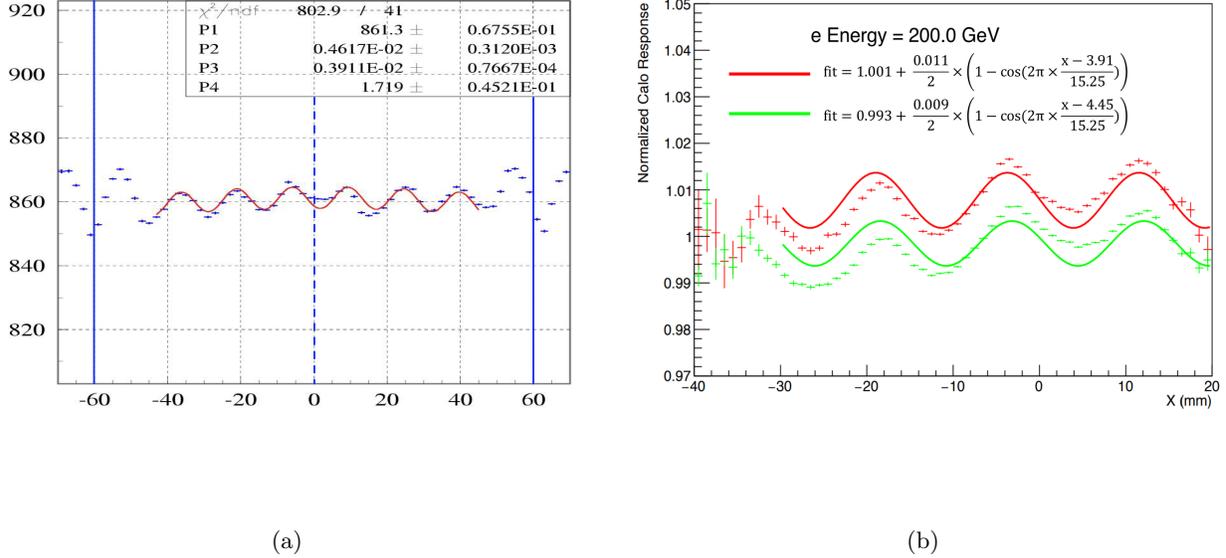


Figure 4.8: Non-uniformity in calorimeter response across the ECAL cell for (a) a 50 GeV electron in LHCb data (b) a 200 GeV electron in FASER data. The dashed blue line on the LHCb plot shows the centre of the ECAL cell, the solid blue lines indicate the edges. The FASER plot shows data collected from two areas of the ECAL cell: away from the WLS fibres (green) and close to the WLS fibres (red), showing the position-dependent response, in addition to the change in response at the cell edge.

1550 dE/dx is the average energy loss in MeVcm^{-1} according to the Bethe-Bloch formula in Equation
 1551 4.1.

1552 In addition to this, there are also non-uniformities in the ECAL due to light collection efficiency
 1553 and energy reflection at the edges [107]. Figure 4.8a [108] shows the variation seen at the ECAL
 1554 cell edges of the LHCb outer modules in the case of 50 GeV electrons. The dashed blue line
 1555 indicates the centre of the ECAL cell and the solid vertical lines indicate the edges. Figure 4.8b
 1556 shows the variation in calorimeter response as a function of position in FASER data. It also shows
 1557 the difference in the response based on the position within the ECAL cell; the red fit uses data
 1558 collected close to the WLS fibres in the ECAL module, light collection improves close to these
 1559 fibres. Accounting for these non-uniformities in calorimeter response in the simulation results in
 1560 an increase in deposited energy of $\sim 3\%$.

1561 Finally, the layer of Tyvek paper between the alternating plastic scintillator and lead layers in
 1562 the calorimeter was not initially taken into account in the FASER MC geometry. The addition of

1563 this material into the simulation of the calorimeter geometry decreased the energy deposited in the
1564 calorimeter by around 6%. Plots showing the change in energy deposition with the implementation
1565 of these effects and corrections can be found in Appendix A.1.

1566 4.2.3 Energy Resolution

1567 The measurement of energy with an EM calorimeter is based on the principle that the energy
1568 deposited by a charged particle shower is proportional to the energy of the incident particle. The
1569 energy resolution, σ/E , of a realistic calorimeter is defined as [109]:

$$\sigma_E/E = a/\sqrt{E} \oplus b/E \oplus c \quad (4.6)$$

1570 where σ is the width of the distribution, \oplus indicates quadratic sum. The a/\sqrt{E} term is the
1571 stochastic term that describes fluctuations related to the physical development of the particle
1572 shower; b/E is the noise term which describes electronic noise of the readout chain; c represents
1573 the constant term that is independent of the particle energy.

1574 LHCb test beam simulation using the same ECAL modules [108] found an energy resolution
1575 with a stochastic term of $(9.4 \pm 0.4)\%$ and a constant term of $(0.83 \pm 0.02)\%$. The energy response
1576 and resolution of the ECAL modules in LHCb simulation are shown in Figure 4.9 [108]. The energy
1577 resolution found in FASER test beam simulation is $(9.73 \pm 0.08)\%$ with a constant term of $(0.97 \pm$
1578 $0.01)\%$. The comparison of the two results is shown in Figure 4.10. Measurement of the energy
1579 resolution of the FASER calorimeter is further explored in Chapter 8 where the results of the 2021
1580 calorimeter test beam are discussed. The fit of the simulation in Figure 4.10 does not include a
1581 noise term since the measurement of the resolution was performed on MC before any digitisation
1582 steps to mimic realistic detector noise. The results show that the calorimeter energy resolution
1583 is $\mathcal{O}(1\%)$ in the high energy range relevant to the analyses discussed in this thesis. This level of
1584 energy resolution in the calorimeter is more than sufficient for physics analysis.

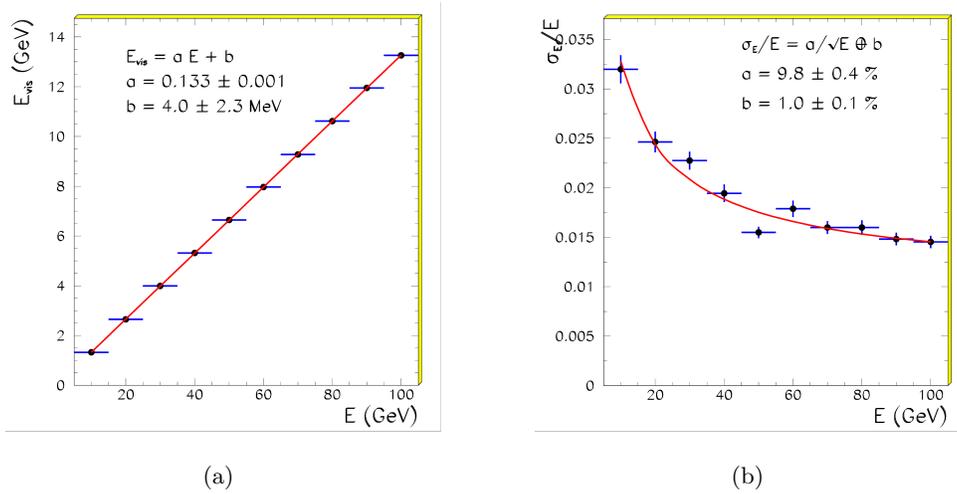


Figure 4.9: Simulation of the (a) energy response and (b) energy resolution of electrons in the outer ECAL module LHCb test beam

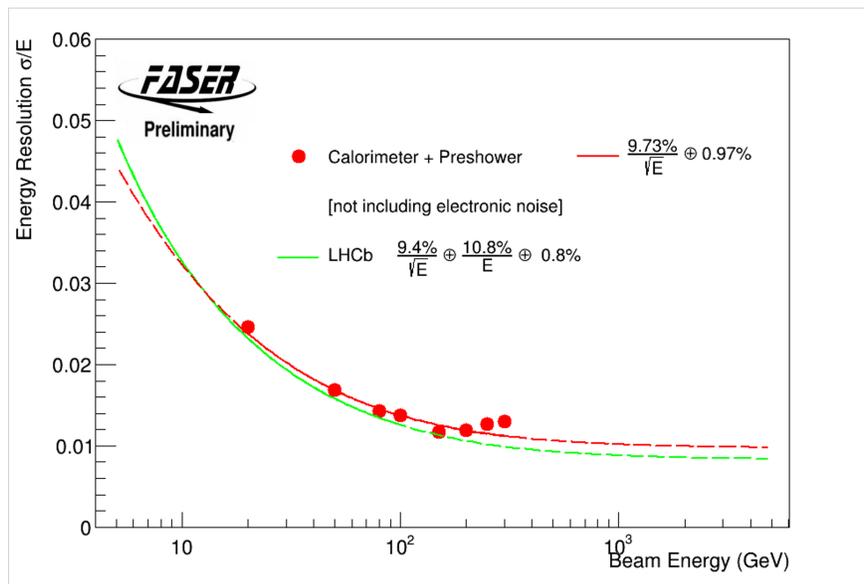


Figure 4.10: The simulated energy resolution of electrons in FASER's ECAL (red) compared to a parameterisation of LHCb test beam results (green).

Chapter 5

The Modelling of Physical Processes and Statistical Analysis

The realistic modelling of hadron-hadron collisions and the resulting parton interactions is important in particle physics analysis. The generation of dedicated Monte Carlo (MC) simulations is necessary to study potential new physics signals and in order to estimate background processes. This chapter describes the MC samples used in generating the dark photon and ALP signals for the two analyses discussed in this thesis. It includes discussion of the systematic uncertainties that arise due to variations in the generator predictions and descriptions of the samples used in background estimation. This chapter also details the statistical framework used to interpret the results of the dark photon and ALP searches, where MC predicted signal yields are used in combination with background predictions to set the exclusion limits presented in this work.

5.1 Monte Carlo Simulation and Event Generators

The modelling of pp collisions, and the resulting interactions, requires an understanding of parton interactions. Protons cannot be dealt with as point-like particles, but rather their interactions can be described in terms of their constituent, point-like quarks and gluons.

Calculations in the Standard Model used to simulate realistic physics interactions depend on factorisation theorems [110]. Factorisation allows for the separate treatment of different processes. Hard scattering processes at high energy in the LHC, where constituent partons of the incoming

1604 beams interact and produce a relatively small amount of highly-energetic outgoing particles, can
 1605 be perturbatively calculated [111]. In softer processes, at lower energies typically around 1 GeV,
 1606 incoming partons are confined within the beam and interact non-perturbatively to produce outgoing
 1607 particles. Soft processes cannot be calculated from first principles but instead need to be modelled
 1608 [112].

1609 The Parton Distribution Function (PDF) can be considered the probability of finding a parton a
 1610 with a momentum fraction x in a hadron h . The PDF is independent of the particular process and
 1611 cannot be calculated using perturbation theory, it must be determined using experimental data. It
 1612 contains all unresolved emission below the factorisation scale μ_F . The factorisation scale can be
 1613 considered as the cutoff between perturbative and non-perturbative processes. The renormalisation
 1614 scale can be considered the scale at which the strong coupling constant α_s is calculated for hard
 1615 processes.

1616 The cross section for a scattering process $ab \rightarrow n$ in a hadronic collision [111] can be calculated
 1617 through:

$$\begin{aligned}
 \sigma &= \sum_{a,b} \int_0^1 dx_a dx_b \int f_a^{h1}(x_a, \mu_F) f_b^{h2}(x_b, \mu_F) d\hat{\sigma}_{ab \rightarrow n}(\mu_F, \mu_R) \\
 &\sum_{a,b} \int_0^1 dx_a dx_b \int d\phi_n f_a^{h1}(x_a, \mu_F) f_b^{h2}(x_b, \mu_F) \\
 &\times \frac{1}{2\hat{s}} |\mathcal{M}_{ab \rightarrow n}|^2(\phi_n; \mu_F, \mu_R)
 \end{aligned} \tag{5.1}$$

1618 where:

- 1619 • $f_a^h(x_a, \mu_F)$ is the parton distribution function (PDF) that depends on the momentum fraction
 1620 x (the Bjorken variable) of a parton a compared to the parent hadron h and the factorisation
 1621 scale μ_F .
- 1622 • $\hat{\sigma}_{ab \rightarrow n}$ is the production cross section of process n . This parton-level cross section depends
 1623 on the momenta given by the final-state phase space ϕ_n , the factorisation scale, and the
 1624 renormalisation scale μ_R .
- 1625 • $|\mathcal{M}_{ab \rightarrow n}|^2(\phi_n; \mu_F, \mu_R)$ is the matrix element describing the hard scattering processes, averaged
 1626 over initial-state spin and colour degrees of freedom. The matrix element can be considered
 1627 as the sum over all the Feynman diagrams for a given process

1628 • $\frac{1}{2\hat{s}}$ describes the parton flux, $\frac{1}{2\hat{s}} = \frac{1}{2x_a x_b \hat{s}}$ where \hat{s} is the hadronic centre-of-mass energy squared

1629 Standard event generators used in particle physics are typically based on the parton model
1630 and employ Leading Order (LO) or Next-to-Leading-Order (NLO) matrix elements to compute
1631 simulations [112]. NLO QCD computations have become the typical tools employed at hadron
1632 colliders, tests have been carried out by comparing NLO results with experimental measurements.
1633 LO calculations include dominant QCD effects at leading logarithmic level, but do not have the
1634 same accuracy that NLO enforces. To provide a precision measurement requires the merging of LO
1635 and NLO calculations.

1636 A problem with merging NLO calculations with PS simulations is the risk of over-counting.
1637 Double-counting occurs when the first emission from the PS and NLO correction is counted in each
1638 case. Matching matrix elements and parton showers resolves the issue of double counting when it
1639 comes to including NLO calculations in addition to LO [113]. This can be achieved in various ways.
1640 One solution is the MC@NLO proposal [114], that avoids the over-counting by subtracting the NLO
1641 approximation from the exact NLO cross section. Another method, and the one implemented in
1642 this thesis, is the POWHEG method to successfully incorporate NLO into the parton shower. An
1643 unavoidable feature of subtraction methods is the negative weights, the treatment of these is also
1644 handled by POWHEG.

1645 5.1.1 MC Event Generators

1646 Listed here are the event generators used in the production of signal and background processes in
1647 MC used in the analyses discussed in this thesis. This is, of course, not an exhaustive list of all
1648 event generators and there are other methods used for matrix and PS matching.

1649

1650 **PYTHIA** The PYTHIA event generator is used for the generation of high-energy physics collision
1651 events, named after the Ancient Greek Pythic oracle [115]. The structure of the PYTHIA event
1652 generator can be split into three main parts [116]: the process level which includes the hard scat-
1653 tering processes, described perturbatively; the parton level which includes initial and final state
1654 radiation, the simulation of various shower models and beam remnants; the hadron level which
1655 deals with QCD confinement, the decay of unstable hadrons and hadron rescattering, described

1656 non-perturbatively using modelling and tuning of parameters. In this thesis, PYTHIA8 is used
1657 both with the default Monash tune [117] and a dedicated forward tune [118]. PYTHIA is used as
1658 a PS generator matched to NLO generators such as POWHEG.

1659

1660 **POWHEG** The POWHEG [114] event generator applies NLO accuracy to the simulation of
1661 hadron-hadron collisions. This is achieved through matrix element generation that is interfaced
1662 with generators such as PYTHIA in order to simulate the parton shower. POWHEG is used in this
1663 thesis with the NNPDF3.1sx+LHCb PDF set [119, 120] to model the production of B -mesons at
1664 NLO+NLL x ¹[122] accuracy, matched with PYTHIA8 [2] to model the parton shower and hadro-
1665 nisation.

1666

1667 **EPOS-LHC** The EPOS-LHC [123] event generator is designed for minimum bias hadronic inter-
1668 actions, used for both heavy ion interactions and cosmic ray air shower simulations. EPOS-LHC
1669 is used to generate the flux of light hadrons in the forward region, including forward π^0 and η
1670 production.

1671

1672 **SIBYLL** The SIBYLL [124] event generator is used for cosmic ray and extensive air shower sim-
1673 ulations. SIBYLL is used to model hadronic interactions at fixed target and collider experiments,
1674 it is based on the Dual Parton Model, Lund Monte Carlo Model and minijet model. In this thesis
1675 it is used to calculate the uncertainty on the light hadron flux.

1676

1677 **QGSJET** The QGSJET [125] event generator is another cosmic ray event generator which is used
1678 to model light hadrons, QGSJET is based on the quark gluon string model. The prediction from
1679 this generator is also taken into account when calculating the light hadron flux uncertainty.

1680

1681 **DPMJET** The DPMJET [126] event generator is a cosmic ray event generator based on the Dual
1682 Parton Model, it is often used to simulate the production of charmed hadrons.

1683

¹NLL x refers to the computation of next-to-leading logarithmic corrections which deal with small- x resummations due to scaling variations [121].

1684 **GENIE** GENIE [127] is a neutrino event generator and simulation package that aims to model all
1685 types of neutrino interactions with any neutrino flavour and target type. The framework uses a
1686 large number of physics models including nuclear physics models, hadronization models and cross
1687 section models which provide accurate calculations of the differential and total cross section of
1688 interacting neutrinos. It is used to model the interactions in each of the neutrino MC samples used
1689 in this thesis.

1690

1691 **FLUKA** FLUKA [92] is an event generator and simulation package. It provides MC estimations
1692 with many applications in high energy experimental physics and engineering, shielding, detector
1693 and telescope design, cosmic ray studies, dosimetry and medical physics. It is used in the generation
1694 of several high-statistic muon MC samples in this thesis.

1695 5.1.2 FORESEE: The Forward Experiment Sensitivity Estimator

1696 Properly modelling the far-forward spectra of mesons which could produce BSM signatures is vital
1697 to understand and predict FASER’s sensitivity to LLPs. As discussed above, there are many event
1698 generators that can be used to produce MC simulation of hadronic interactions. However, these
1699 event generators do not provide predictions of the fluxes of the resulting LLPs at FASER.

1700 The Forward Experiment Sensitivity Estimator (**FORESEE**) is the package used by FASER
1701 that provides the spectra of an extensive list of light mesons, baryons, photons, charmed hadrons,
1702 bottom hadrons and heavy gauge bosons and predicts the resulting LLP spectra specific to the
1703 FASER location [128]. Figure 5.1a shows the forward spectra predicted by EPOS-LHC in the case
1704 of neutral pions, a primary source of dark photons. Figure 5.1b shows the forward spectra predicted
1705 by PYTHIA8 with the Monash tune in the case of neutral B -mesons, a primary source of ALPs.
1706 The angular acceptance of FASER is to the left of the dashed line in each case. The characteristic
1707 transverse momentum of each meson is indicated by the diagonal dashed line. In FORESEE these
1708 distributions are used to generate the forward LLP flux due to these meson decays.

1709 FORESEE allows the user to obtain the **expected sensitivity** reach for particular BSM mod-
1710 els. The package performs simulations for an extensive range of BSM models with experimental
1711 geometries specific to FASER and with the option to apply basic cuts to the visible signal [128].
1712 Three different LLP production modes are considered within the framework; the main production

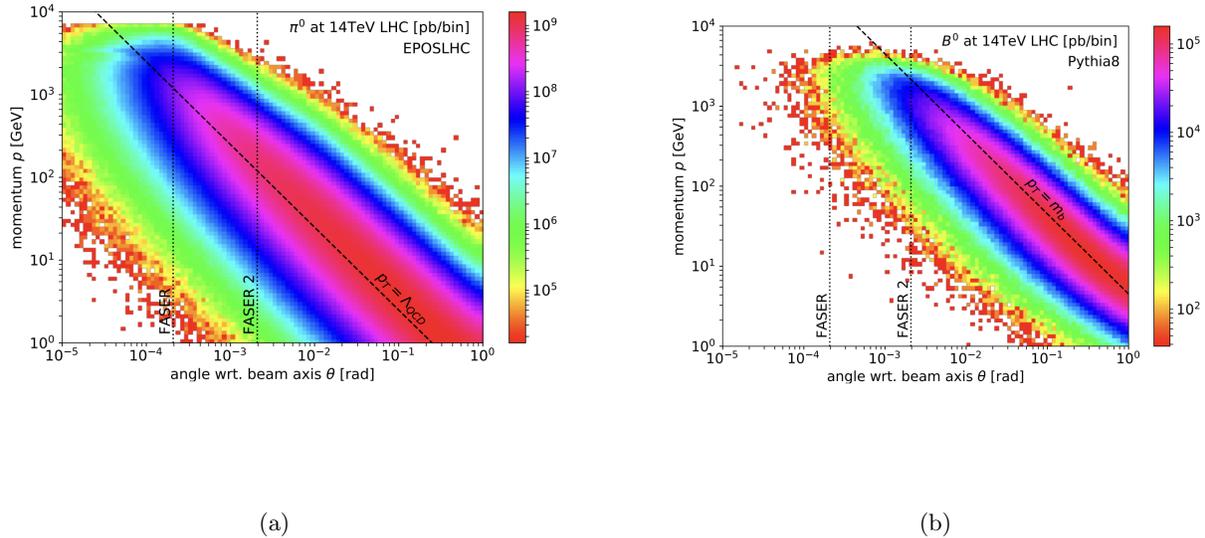


Figure 5.1: The distribution of (a) π^0 mesons and (b) B^0 mesons in the forward (θ, p) plane. Where θ is the angle with respect to beam axis and p is the meson's momentum. The predicted spectra are obtained assuming 14 TeV pp collision energy. The angular acceptance of FASER is indicated.

1713 mode of LLPs in most models is from the decay of SM particles. LLPs may also be produced in
 1714 three-body decays, where mixing with SM particles occurs. Finally, LLPs can be produced directly,
 1715 for example as in A' production via Bremsstrahlung or Drell-Yan production as discussed in Chap-
 1716 ter 2. FORESEE generates neutral pions using the EPOS-LHC generator and generates B-mesons
 1717 using PYTHIA with various tuning parameters including the Monash tune [117] as discussed in the
 1718 above section.

1719 5.2 Modelling of the Dark Photon and ALP Signal

1720 The production of dark photons in the far-forward region is modelled in FORESEE using the
 1721 EPOS-LHC generator. The production of sufficiently light dark photons occurs primarily through
 1722 the decay of forward π^0 and η mesons. Dark photons can also be produced via dark Bremsstrahlung,
 1723 modelled by the Fermi-Weizacher-Williams approximation [1]. The relevant Feynman diagrams for
 1724 dark photon production via pion decay and dark bremsstrahlung are shown in Figure 2.5 in Chap-
 1725 ter 2.5.1, Figure 2.6 shows the different production mechanisms and the far-forward dark photon
 1726 production cross section as a function of mass. At heavier masses, the production is dominated by

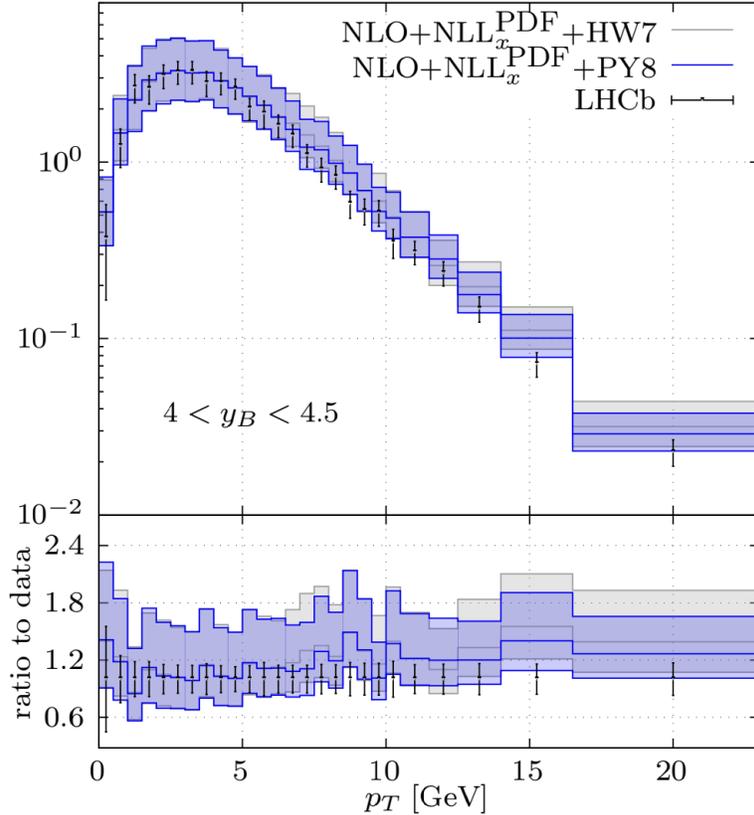


Figure 5.2: Predictions for the production of B -mesons with POWHEG+Pythia prescription used for the ALP signal MC (NLO+NLL PDF + P8), compared to the POWHEG+HERWIG and LHCb data. The blue band shows the large scale uncertainties.

1727 Drell-Yan production [44] but this is outside of the dark photon mass considered in this search.

1728 The production of ALPs mainly occurs in FCNC decays of kaons and B mesons. The modelling
 1729 of light hadrons that make up the ALP signal is done using the EPOS-LHC event generator. The
 1730 simulation of the forward B -mesons comes from recommendations outlined in Ref. [129] using
 1731 POWHEG with the NNPDF3.1sx+LHCb PDF set [119, 120] to model the B -meson production
 1732 at NLO+NLLx [122] accuracy, matched with PYTHIA8 [2]. The NLO calculation is performed in
 1733 a fixed-flavour scheme with massive heavy quarks and the hadronisation of these heavy quarks is
 1734 modelled using PYTHIA8. Figure 5.2 shows how the modelling of the production of B -mesons with
 1735 the prescription chosen for this analysis agrees well with **data**, although with large uncertainties.

1736 The uncertainty on the light hadron component of the ALP signal comes from the spread of
 1737 the generator predictions provided by SIBYLL, QGSJET, PYTHIA and PYTHIAForward². The

²A dedicated forward tune of PYTHIA discussed in Ref. [118].

1738 uncertainty associated with the charm hadron component comes from the POWHEG+PYTHIA
 1739 minimum and maximum predictions, which use variation of the factorisation and renormalisation
 1740 scales by a factor of 2 and a factor of $\frac{1}{2}$. The central factorisation and renormalisation scales are
 1741 set to $\mu_F = \mu_R = (m_Q^2 + p_{T,Q}^2)^{1/2}$ defined in Ref. [129], in addition to a 20% uncertainty in the
 1742 modeling of the B hadrons, recommended following discussion with the FASER theory group, due
 1743 to the large uncertainties that can be seen in Figure 5.2.

1744 For the generation of the ALP signal, the weights of the different generators are taken into
 1745 account in the simulation stage before digitisation and reconstruction. With the generation of the
 1746 A' signal, the uncertainty is derived using a parameterisation of the signal yields from EPOS-LHC,
 1747 QGSJET and SIBYLL, this is described in Chapter 6.

1748 5.3 Overview of MC Background Samples

1749 This section gives an overview of the MC samples used to evaluate background predictions and
 1750 systematic uncertainties. This includes the MC samples used to: predict the neutrino background;
 1751 study photon conversion events; predict the muon flux at FASER; investigate the muon flux specif-
 1752 ically reaching FASER at large-angles.

1753 5.3.1 Modelling of Far-Forward Neutrino Interactions

1754 Simulation of the total flux of neutrinos at FASER is vital to the dark photon and ALP searches.
 1755 The total background estimation from neutrinos in both of the analyses is reliant on MC prediction
 1756 and the neutrino interactions are modelled with GENIE.

1757 In the dark photon analysis, where the component of neutrino background is negligible, a 300
 1758 ab^{-1} MC sample of neutrino interactions is used. Modelled in GENIE, this sample uses EPOS-LHC,
 1759 QGSJET, DPMJET³, SIBYLL and PYTHIA, according to Ref. [130].

1760 In the ALPs analysis the component of neutrino background is not negligible and is modelled
 1761 according to updated recommendations in Ref. [129]. There are two primary components of the far-
 1762 forward neutrino flux: light, displaced hadron decays and prompt charmed hadrons. The component
 1763 of neutrino flux coming from light hadrons is simulated using the EPOS-LHC generator. An

³DPMJET has not been tuned to charm production data [130] and is not validated for charm production, it was not included in the generation of neutrino MC for the ALP analysis.

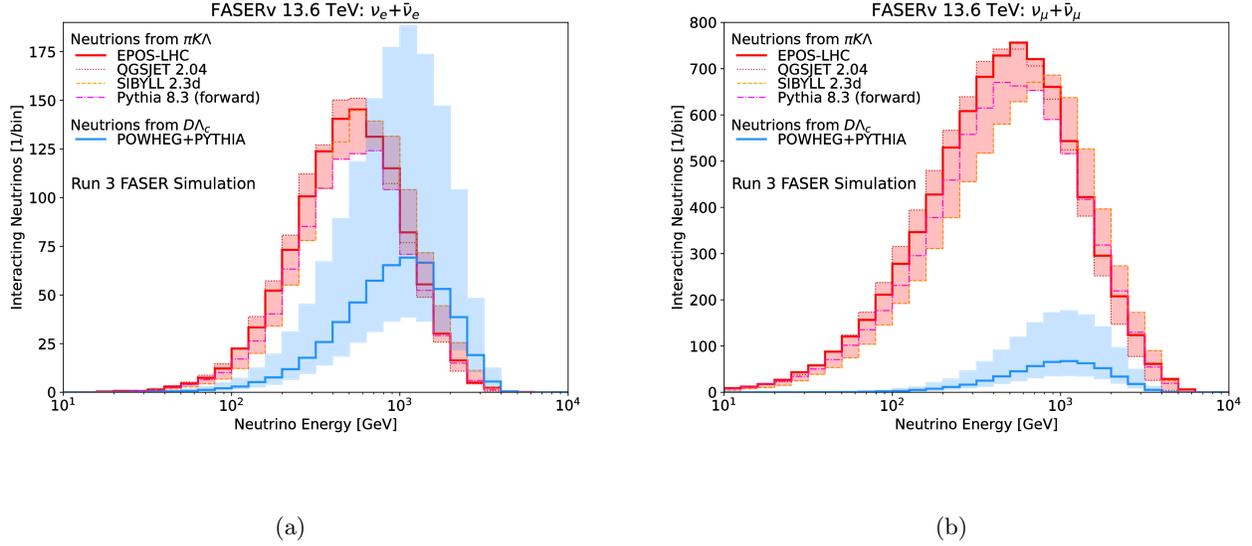


Figure 5.3: The predicted energy distribution of (a) electron neutrinos and (b) muon neutrinos for an integrated luminosity of 250 fb^{-1} . The component from light (charm) hadron decays is shown in red (blue). The shaded regions show the corresponding uncertainties associated with the flux.

1764 envelope of the EPOS-LHC, SIBYLL, QGSJET and PYTHIAForward generators is used to derive
 1765 the uncertainty. The charm hadron component comes from the POWHEG+PYTHIA prediction
 1766 with uncertainty derived from scale and tuning variations in the same way as the ALP signal
 1767 MC. To combine the light and charm uncertainties to give the symmetric uncertainties on the
 1768 ν_e and ν_μ component, the maximum deviation from the nominal yield is calculated and then
 1769 added in quadrature. The neutrino flux produced from the different MC event generators is shown
 1770 in Figure 5.3 for both ν_e and ν_μ [131], the large uncertainties particularly associated with the
 1771 POWHEG+PYTHIA charmed hadron component are clear from the large error bands.

1772 For each of the MC samples used for the neutrino background estimation, 10ab^{-1} are simulated
 1773 and scaled to the size of the dataset used in the ALP search.

1774 5.3.2 FLUKA and Large-angle Muon Simulations

1775 In both analyses, the component of background from muons that may miss the veto scintillators
 1776 must be evaluated. The use of tracking variables in the signal selection for the dark photon
 1777 search, which looks for two closely-spaced charged tracks from an e^+e^- pair makes rejecting muon

1778 background simple. However, there is still a possibility that large-angle muons which miss the
1779 veto scintillators could enter FASER and produce signal-like topology. It is more difficult to reject
1780 this type of background in the ALP search, where no requirements are placed on tracks, therefore,
1781 different MC samples are used to evaluate this backgrounds to more specifically target the large-
1782 angle muons.

1783 For the purposes of background estimation in the dark photon analysis, two MC samples of high
1784 energy muons are used, sampled from the 2D FLUKA energy and angular spectra [92, 132, 133].
1785 The first sample simulates 2×10^7 muon events entering FASER from the direction of IP1. The
1786 second sample contains 8×10^5 events generated to study muon events that could miss the veto
1787 scintillators. These events are generated before the VetoNu detector ($z = -3.75$ m) at a radius
1788 of 15-30 cm spanning the edge of the VetoNu acceptance. These samples are used to evaluate the
1789 component of large-angle muon background present in the dark photon analysis, see Chapter 6.3.4.

1790 The first MC sample considered in the ALPs search is generated from a FLUKA sample con-
1791 sisting of 200 million pp collisions, resulting in 15×10^6 muon events. This sample includes a
1792 realistic spectrum of muons entering from all directions, therefore giving an idea of the number of
1793 such large-angle muon events that survive analysis selections, it is also used to estimate the neutral
1794 hadron background in Chapter 7.3.2. It provides more statistics than previous samples used in the
1795 dark photon search. To properly evaluate the large-angle muon component, there is an additional,
1796 dedicated large-angle muon MC sample also used to study this type of muon background. In this
1797 sample 4×10^5 muons are simulated at a large radius ($9 \text{ cm} < r < 25 \text{ cm}$) with the FLUKA
1798 energy spectrum. The full method for estimating the component of large-angle muon background
1799 in explored in Chapter 7.3.4.

1800 5.4 Statistical Analysis

1801 Data analyses rely on prediction for the various signal and background components in the data to
1802 aid the interpretation of observations, where the signal component describes the process of interest.
1803 If no excess is observed in the data, exclusion limits may be set within a grid of potential physics
1804 scenarios, excluding a subset of the tested parameter space. The statistical interpretation of the
1805 results is done using the statistical analysis framework HistFitter [134], described in the following

1806 section.

1807 5.4.1 The HistFitter Framework

1808 The HistFactory package is used to build a parametric model to describe the data which is provided
1809 as histograms of the MC signal model and associated background. A Probability Density Function
1810 (PDF) is constructed to perform fits on the data. The framework performs a profile-likelihood fit,
1811 with a general likelihood of an analysis represented by the product of a Poisson distribution of
1812 the number of events in control regions (CRs) and signal regions (SRs), and additional Gaussian
1813 distributions which constrain the uncertainties. The likelihood, which can be thought of as the
1814 probability of a particular outcome of an experiment, is given in Equation 5.2 [134]:

$$\begin{aligned} L(n, \theta^0 | \mu_{sig}, b, \theta) &= P_{SR} \times P_{CR} \times C_{syst} \\ &= P(n_S | \lambda_S(\mu_{sig}, b, \theta)) \times \prod_{i \in CR} P(n_i | \lambda_i(\mu_{sig}, b, \theta)) \times C_{syst}(\theta^0, \theta) \end{aligned} \quad (5.2)$$

1815 where n_S and n_i are the Poisson measurements of the number of events in the signal region and
1816 control region i , θ is the nuisance parameter that describes each systematic uncertainty, b is the
1817 background prediction, λ_S and λ_i represent the Poisson prediction of the number of events in the
1818 SR and CRs. μ_{sig} is the signal-strength parameter.

1819 C_{syst} is the systematic uncertainty term, a probability density function constructed with the
1820 product of the Gaussian distributions of each systematic variation [134]. The nominal value of the
1821 nuisance parameters describing the systematic uncertainties is varied and a maximum likelihood
1822 procedure is performed:

$$C_{syst}(\theta^0, \theta) = \prod_{j \in systs} G(\theta_j^0 - \theta_j) \quad (5.3)$$

1823 where G is the Gaussian width.

1824 HistFitter performs statistical tests based on interpolation and extrapolation algorithms which
1825 describe the parameterised PDFs for all values of nuisance parameters θ_j . The likelihood function
1826 in Equation 5.2 is used to construct a profile likelihood ratio in order to test hypothesised values
1827 of μ_{sig} [135].

1828 The first step is performing a profile likelihood ratio [135] to test hypothesised values of μ_{sig}

1829 given by a test statistic $t_{\mu_{sig}}$ defined in Equation 5.4. In the search for new physics, the test statistic
 1830 can be used to assess the level of agreement between expected and observed signal yields. A high
 1831 value of $t_{\mu_{sig}}$ represents incompatibility between the data and μ_{sig} .

$$t_{\mu_{sig}} = -2 \ln \left(\frac{L(\mu_{sig}, \hat{\theta})}{L(\hat{\mu}_{sig}, \hat{\theta})} \right). \quad (5.4)$$

1832 The **numerator** in Equation 5.4 represents the value of θ that maximises L in Equation 5.2 for a
 1833 particular μ_{sig} . It is the conditional maximum-likelihood estimator of θ ; the denominator is the
 1834 maximised (unconditional) likelihood function [135].

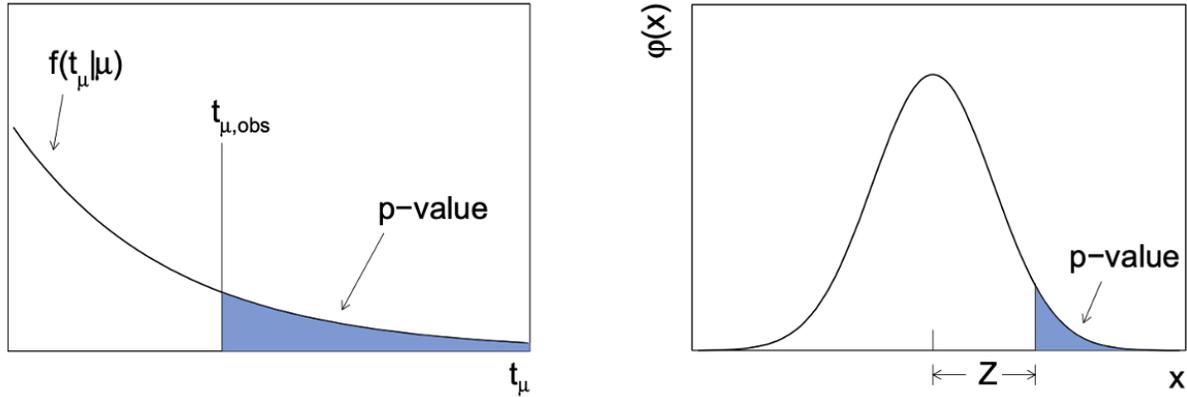
1835 In the search for new physics there are two hypotheses to consider: a *background-only* hypoth-
 1836 esis assumes no BSM signal, only contributions from the Standard Model are taken into consid-
 1837 eration; a *signal+background* hypothesis assumes that a BSM signal is present in the dataset in
 1838 addition to the SM expectation. The distribution of the test statistic is evaluated for each of these
 1839 hypotheses. When the signal strength is set to $\mu_{sig} = 0$ the signal component is turned off, for
 1840 $\mu_{sig} = 1$ the signal expectation is set to the nominal value of the model under consideration [134].

1841 Given a hypothesis H_0 , the p -value can estimate the significance of a discrepancy between data
 1842 and the assumption made in H_0 [4]. Equation 5.5 [135] defines the p -value in terms of test statistic:

$$p = \int_{t_{\mu_{sig}, obs}}^{\inf} f(t_{\mu_{sig}} | \mu_{sig}) dt_{\mu_{sig}}, \quad (5.5)$$

1843 where $t_{\mu_{sig}, obs}$ is the value of the test statistic observed in data, $f(t_{\mu_{sig}} | \mu_{sig})$ represents the PDF of
 1844 t_{μ} . The p -value can be visualised as the integral of a PDF from the observed value to the end of
 1845 the probability density function, this is shown in Figure 5.4a [135]. In particle physics searches the
 1846 usual convention is to convert the p -value to a significance Z , the relation between the p -value and
 1847 significance is shown in Figure 5.4b [135] and defined according to the quantile Φ^{-1} of a Gaussian
 1848 distribution in Equation 5.6. A rejection of the background hypothesis with a significance of at
 1849 least $Z = 5$ is considered an appropriate level to be deemed a discovery.

$$Z = \Phi^{-1}(1 - p) \quad (5.6)$$



(a)

(b)

Figure 5.4: (a) The p -value can be visualised as the integral of a PDF from the observed value to the end of the probability density function. This is shown in Figure 5.4a. (b) The relation between the p -value and significance Z

1851 To determine whether an observation agrees with the *background-only* hypothesis, or with the
 1852 *signal+background* hypothesis as an indication of new physics results, the CL_s method [136] can be
 1853 used. The CL_s can be thought of as the confidence a physicist can have in the signal hypothesis, and
 1854 can be defined in terms of the *background-only* confidence-level CL_b and the *signal+background*
 1855 confidence-level CL_{s+b} :

$$CL_s = \frac{CL_{s+b}}{CL_b} \quad (5.7)$$

1856 A confidence-level of 90%, the convention used for the results in this thesis, can therefore be
 1857 obtained by requiring a CL_s value of less than 0.1, since:

$$1 - CL_s \leq CL. \quad (5.8)$$

1858 5.4.2 Fit Configuration

1859 The three most commonly used fit configurations are: a background-only fit; a model-dependent
 1860 fit; a model-independent fit.

1861

1862 **Background-only fit** A background-only fit is independent of any signal models and only the SM
1863 background MC prediction is included in the fit. The signal strength parameter is set to $\mu_{sig} = 0$,
1864 only CRs are considered, therefore, the results of this fit are not affected by any observed events
1865 in the SR. This fitting procedure uses the *background-only* hypothesis; the purpose of this fit is to
1866 estimate the total background in the signal region(s) and validation regions.

1867

1868 **Model-independent fit** A model-independent fit compares the background prediction with the
1869 expectation from the signal. It measures the significance of any observed excess in the SR, indepen-
1870 dent of any particular signal model. This fitting procedure uses the *background-only* hypothesis;
1871 the purpose of this fit is to set upper limits on the number of events above what is expected in the
1872 SR.

1873

1874 **Model-dependent fit** In the case of no excess in data in the SR, a model-dependent fit is used
1875 to set exclusion limits. In the case of excess, the model-dependent fit measures the signal strength.
1876 This fitting procedure uses the *signal+background* hypothesis; the purpose of this fit is to study a
1877 specific signal model.

1878

1879 A sketch, adapted from Ref. [134], of the fit configuration implemented in the ALP-W search
1880 is shown in Figure 5.5. The setup uses a **single Channel**: the signal region. There are no control
1881 regions or validation regions used in this configuration. The two samples refer to the ALP signal
1882 and background yields, respectively. The experimental systematic uncertainties related to the
1883 calorimeter and preshower variables used in the signal selection (**Sys. B, Sys. C, Sys. D**) are
1884 correlated between the signal and background samples. The uncertainties due to the MC generation
1885 of the signal (Sys. A) and neutrino background (Sys. E) are uncorrelated as the uncertainty is
1886 derived differently in the two cases. Also included in the fit is the uncertainty due to the limited
1887 MC statistics of the samples, and the uncertainty on the luminosity measurement from ATLAS,
1888 which is implemented as a measurement uncertainty within the framework. More details on the
1889 treatment of systematic uncertainties used in the ALP analysis are given in Chapter 7.4.

1890 This thesis presents two searches for BSM physics in the form of LLPs: the dark photon and the
1891 axion-like particle. These searches resulted in the observation of no excess in data, leading to the

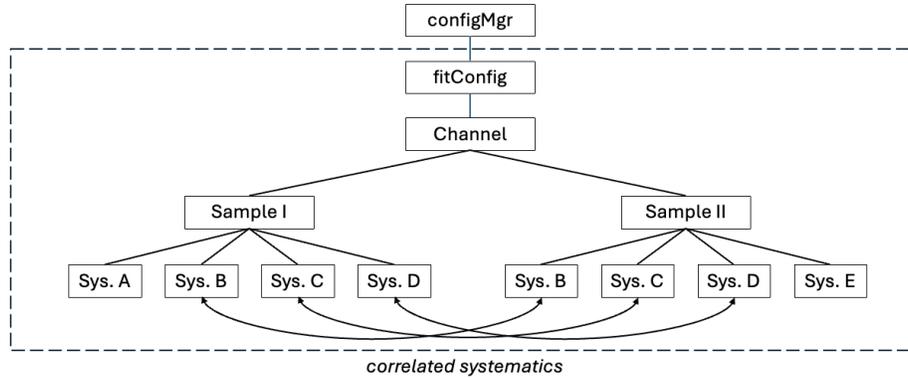


Figure 5.5: The fit configuration and setup of the signal region, samples and systematics used in the model-dependent fit in the ALP-W search.

1892 setting of exclusion limits in the respective parameter space. A model-dependent fit is repeated for
 1893 each point on a grid of potential signal MC scenarios, assessing the confidence level of each point
 1894 and therefore probing the phase space of the signal model. Using 90% confidence levels means the
 1895 probability of falsely excluding a true signal is less than 10%.

Chapter 6

The Search for Dark Photons

This chapter describes FASER’s search for dark photons with 27.0 fb^{-1} of the 2022 Run 3 dataset [1, 137]. This analysis searches for a highly-collimated and highly-energetic electron-positron pair that is characteristic of a dark photon decay within FASER’s decay volume. The search provides sensitivity to dark photons with couplings $\epsilon \sim 4 \times 10^{-6} < \epsilon < 2 \times 10^{-4}$ and with masses $m_{A'} \sim 10 \text{ MeV} - 80 \text{ MeV}$. This is a blinded **cut-and-count** analysis that uses signal and background yields in the defined signal region.

This chapter will describe: the dataset and signal MC simulation samples used in the analysis; the event selection applied to data and MC in order to identify the dark photon signal; the methods of SM background estimation, including a prediction of total background processes present in the dataset; the evaluation of the various sources of systematic uncertainties; the statistical interpretation of the results of the analysis. The author contributed to estimation of the SM background and validation of these estimates using data-driven techniques, and the evaluation of the systematic uncertainties associated with the calorimeter.

6.1 Dataset and Simulation Samples

This analysis uses Run 3 data at a centre of mass energy of $\sqrt{s} = 13.6 \text{ TeV}$ corresponding to an integrated luminosity of 27.0 fb^{-1} collected by the FASER experiment in 2022. The luminosity values are evaluated by the ATLAS Collaboration with an uncertainty of 2.2% [138, 82, 139].

The data used for the dark photon analysis are required to belong to a colliding BCID, pass

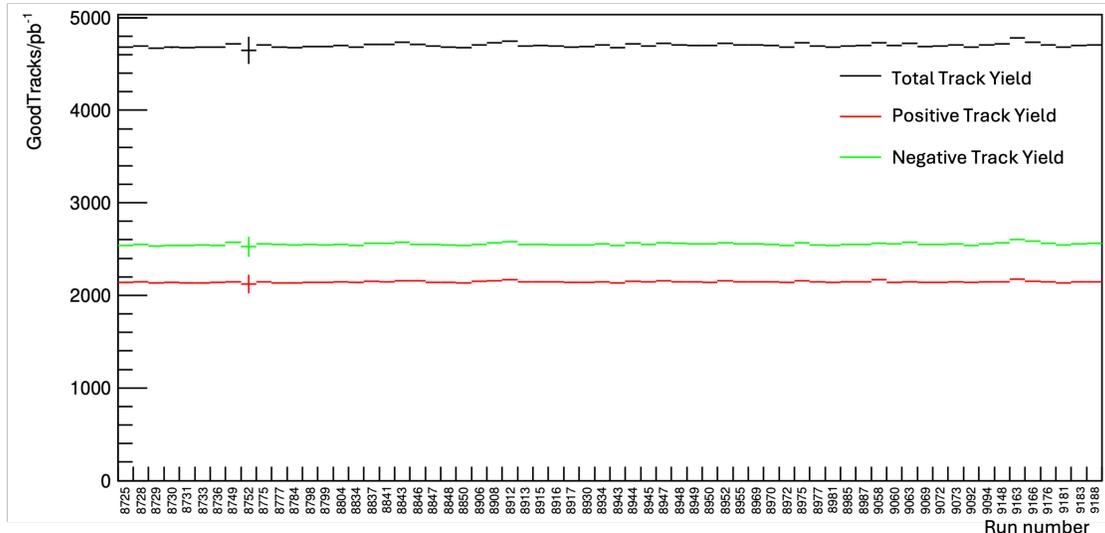


Figure 6.1: Reconstructed good tracks normalised by the corresponding luminosity for the runs used in this analysis. A good track is defined as having a momentum of at least 20 GeV, a χ^2/NDF of at least 25 and at least 12 hits on track within a 95 mm radius once extrapolated back to the scintillator station.

1916 the timing trigger and contain events which have track clusters in all three tracking stations in
 1917 the spectrometer. In addition, all events must have an EM energy in the calorimeter of at least
 1918 100 GeV in order to avoid inefficiency in the calorimeter trigger. Figures 6.1 and 6.2 show the
 1919 stability of the yields as a function of run number for events with reconstructed good tracks and a
 1920 calorimeter energy of at least 100 GeV. The yield of events normalised to corresponding luminosity
 1921 is stable across all data used in this analysis.

1922 The dark photon signal points are generated spanning a 2D parameter space across a range
 1923 of couplings $\epsilon \sim 10^{-6} - 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ and with masses $m_{A'} \sim 10 \text{ MeV} - 100 \text{ MeV}$. The modelled
 1924 parameter space covers the expected region of sensitivity and is shown as a function of mass and
 1925 coupling in Figure 6.3. The dark photon MC signal samples are modelled in FORESEE [128]
 1926 and scaled to a luminosity of 27.0 fb^{-1} and additional simulation samples are used in background
 1927 estimation and studies of the systematic uncertainties. More details on the simulation of the dark
 1928 photon signal and background processes are given in Chapter 5.

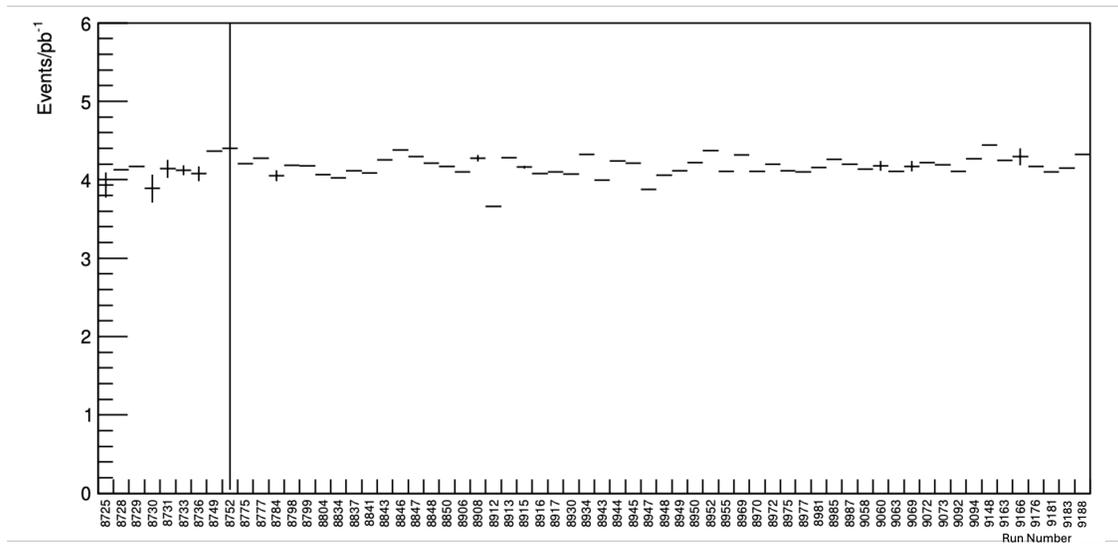


Figure 6.2: Reconstructed events normalised by the corresponding luminosity for the runs used in this analysis. Plot shows the total yield of events with calorimeter energy greater than 100 GeV.

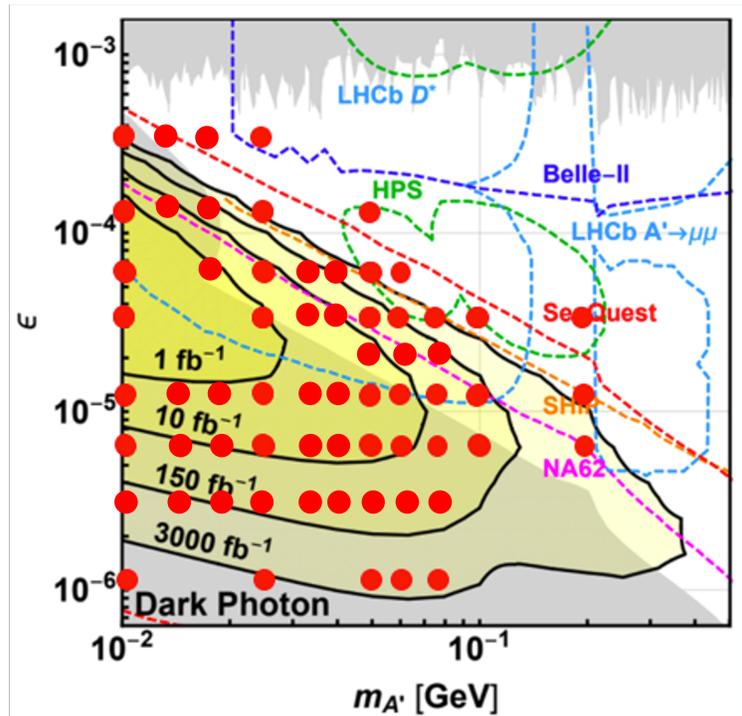


Figure 6.3: Dark photon MC signal points spanning the 2D parameter space as a function of dark photon mass and coupling. Included are existing constraints from previous experiments (grey) and projected sensitivity of future experiments (dashed lines). In yellow is the predicted FASER reach assuming various benchmark amounts of recorded luminosity.

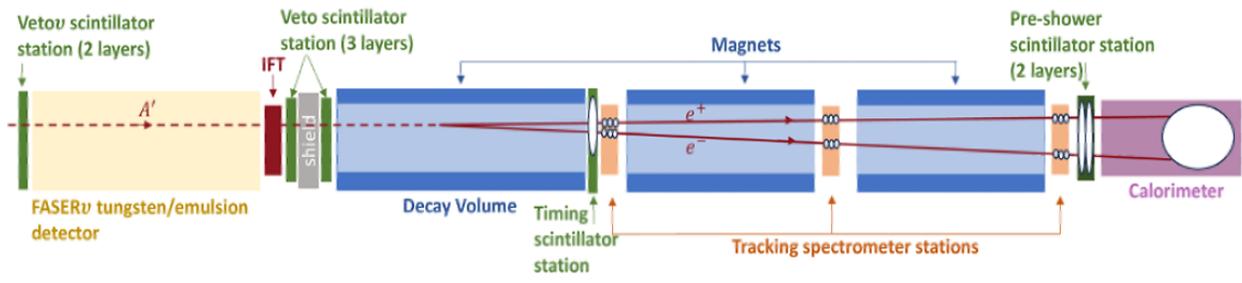


Figure 6.4: A typical dark photon (A') signal event traversing FASER. The neutral A' (dotted line) enters the detector from the left and deposits no charge in any of the veto scintillator stations. It decays within FASER’s decay volume to a highly-energetic e^+e^- pair (dashed lines) which leave charge deposits in the timing scintillator, as well as two tracks within the tracking spectrometer. Energy deposits in the preshower and calorimeter are consistent with an EM shower.

6.2 Event Selection

The dark photon signature is shown in Figure 6.4 in which a neutral A' particle enters the detector and deposits no charge in any of the veto scintillator stations. It decays within the FASER decay volume to a highly-energetic e^+e^- pair which leave charge deposits in the timing scintillator as well as two highly-collimated tracks within the tracking spectrometer. In addition, there will be energy deposits in the preshower and calorimeter consistent with an EM shower.

To avoid any bias affecting the outcome of the analysis, a blinding strategy is initially applied to avoid looking at any event with less charge deposited in the veto scintillators than consistent with a MIP, and with more than 100 GeV EM energy deposited in the calorimeter.

The event selection applied to the signal region in this analysis is as follows:

- The event time is consistent with a colliding BCID
- The event passes the timing trigger
- No charge is deposited in any of the five veto scintillator stations
 - Placing a requirement at a threshold of 40 pC is roughly equivalent to half a MIP signal. This requirement removes over 99% of the muon background in this analysis, as shown in Figure 3.10 in Section 3.3.2.
- The charge in the timing scintillators is equivalent to or larger than two MIPs

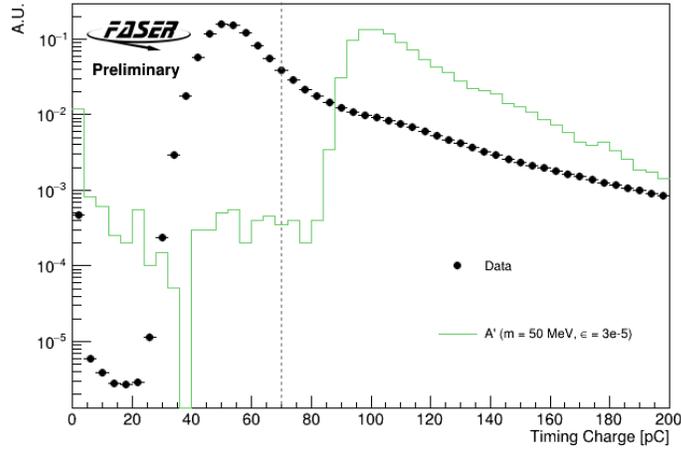


Figure 6.5: Charge deposited in the timing scintillator in data (black), populated mainly by muon events, compared to a representative dark photon MC signal sample (green). The dotted line indicates the 70 pC charge selection used in this analysis.

- 1946 – Placing a requirement of at least 70 pC deposited in the timing scintillator removes muon
- 1947 events in data whilst retaining dark photon signal, motivation for this requirement is
- 1948 shown in Figure 6.5

- 1949 • The event has two reconstructed tracks of good quality and opposite charge

- 1950 – A good quality track is defined as having a momentum of at least 20 GeV, a χ^2/NDF
- 1951 of less than 25, and at least 12 hits on track

- 1952 • The event has two fiducial reconstructed tracks throughout the entire tracking spectrometer

- 1953 – A track position within a 95 mm radius in all three stations in the tracking spectrometer
- 1954 and extrapolated back to the scintillator stations

- 1955 • The event has a total calorimeter energy greater than 500 GeV

- 1956 – Significant deposits in the calorimeter ensures that events with EM-like behaviour are
- 1957 selected and neutrino background is rejected

1958 Table 6.1 shows the efficiency of each of the selections used in this analysis for two dark photon
 1959 MC signal points at different mass and coupling in the parameter space. The event selection retains
 1960 between 40 and 50% of signal events decaying in the decay volume, with the largest inefficiency

Table 6.1: MC cutflow for representative dark photon signal points with mass 25.1 MeV and coupling $\epsilon = 3 \times 10^{-5}$ and mass 50.1 MeV and coupling $\epsilon = 1 \times 10^{-5}$, showing number of signal events entering and passing each selection, along with the efficiency of that selection and the cumulative efficiency to that point. The signal yield is scaled for 27.0 fb^{-1} .

Selection	Input	Pass	Effic.	Cum. Effic.
$m_{A'} = 25.1 \text{ MeV}, \epsilon = 3 \times 10^{-5}$				
No timing saturation	95.6	95.3	99.7%	99.7%
No VetoNu Signal	95.3	95.3	100.0%	100.0%
No Veto Signal	95.3	95.0	99.7%	99.7%
Timing Signal	95.0	93.3	98.2%	97.9%
Preshower Signal	93.3	93.0	99.7%	97.6%
≥ 1 good track	93.0	85.2	91.6%	89.4%
$== 2$ good tracks	85.2	52.4	61.5%	55.0%
Track Radius $< 95 \text{ mm}$	52.4	47.6	90.9%	50.0%
Calo E $> 500 \text{ GeV}$	46.9	46.8	99.8%	49.0%
$m_{A'} = 50.1 \text{ MeV}, \epsilon = 1 \times 10^{-5}$				
No timing saturation	17.0	16.9	99.4%	99.4%
No VetoNu Signal	16.9	16.9	100.0%	100.0%
No Veto Signal	16.9	16.8	99.8%	99.8%
Timing Signal	16.8	16.5	98.1%	97.9%
Preshower Signal	16.5	16.5	99.6%	97.6%
≥ 1 good track	16.5	14.9	90.5%	88.3%
$== 2$ good tracks	14.9	8.99	60.3%	53.2%
Track radius $< 95 \text{ mm}$	8.99	8.07	89.8%	47.8%
Calo E $> 500 \text{ GeV}$	7.39	7.26	98.2%	43.0%

1961 coming from the strict tracking requirements. In order to replicate realistic two-track efficiency,
 1962 the MC in Table 6.1 would also need to be scaled down by 7% following data-driven estimation of
 1963 this **efficiency**. This is detailed in Section 6.4.2.3.

1964 **6.3 Background Estimation**

1965 Multiple sources of background that can potentially contaminate the selected signal are described
 1966 in this section. The largest source of background in this analysis is due to neutrino interactions,
 1967 followed by background from neutral hadrons that may enter FASER. Muons are a potential source
 1968 of background, there could be muons that pass the veto scintillator charge requirements due to
 1969 inefficiency, and large-angle muons that may miss the veto scintillator but still leave a signal in the

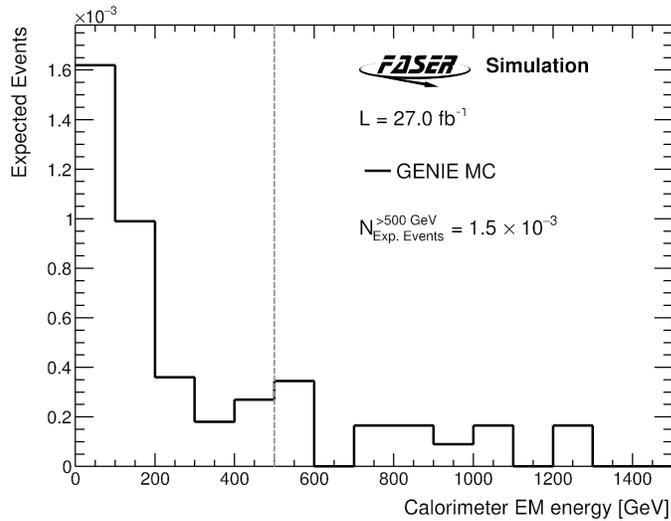


Figure 6.6: The calorimeter EM energy distribution of the GENIE neutrino MC sample after the signal region selections have been applied. The dashed line indicates the calorimeter energy requirement above 500 GeV, above this point there are 1.5×10^{-3} expected neutrino events.

1970 timing scintillator when they travel through the tracking spectrometer. Other sources of background
 1971 considered are non-collision backgrounds from LHC beam 1 and cosmic-ray interactions.

1972 6.3.1 Neutrino Background

1973 Neutrinos produced upstream of FASER will pass the charge selections placed on the five veto
 1974 scintillators. In addition, interactions of the neutrinos with detector material downstream of the
 1975 veto stations can produce charged and neutral particles that may leave tracks in the spectrometer
 1976 and significant energy deposits in the calorimeter, similar to the dark photon signature. In order to
 1977 estimate this background, the 300 ab^{-1} MC sample described in Chapter 5 is used. Once scaled to
 1978 the luminosity of the dataset, 1.5×10^{-3} events passed the signal region selection, consisting of 1.2
 1979 $\times 10^{-3} \nu_e$ events and $3 \times 10^{-4} \nu_\mu$ events. The uncertainty on the incoming neutrino flux is taken
 1980 to be 100% for electron neutrinos and 25% for muon neutrinos due to the theoretical uncertainties.
 1981 An additional 100% uncertainty is applied to account for the effect of uncertainties in the modelling
 1982 of neutrino interactions in MC.

1983 Figure 6.6 shows the calorimeter energy distribution of the neutrino MC sample. The 500 GeV
 1984 requirement used in the event selection is indicated by the dashed line, chosen to reject the majority
 1985 of this background whilst keeping significant dark photon signal. The total neutrino background

Table 6.2: Summary of the MC estimate for the neutrino background for 27.0 fb^{-1} in the signal region. Included are uncertainties from flux variations, and those derived from MC statistics, respectively.

Signal Region	
ν_e	0.0012
ν_μ	0.0003
Total	$(1.5 \pm 1.9 \pm 0.5) \times 10^{-3}$
Total	$(1.5 \pm 2.0) \times 10^{-3}$ (130%)

1986 estimate, in terms of neutrino type and with sources of systematic and statistical error, is presented
 1987 in Table 6.2.

1988 6.3.2 Neutral Hadrons

1989 Neutral hadrons could be a possible source of background in this analysis if they pass through
 1990 the veto scintillator system undetected and go on to decay to particles producing two charged
 1991 particles that leave tracks in the spectrometer and deposit a significant amount of calorimeter
 1992 energy, mimicking an e^+e^- pair in the detector. The neutral hadron would have to travel through
 1993 the eight interaction lengths that make up the FASER ν emulsion detector, and so this component
 1994 of background is highly suppressed.

1995 In order to investigate the fraction of neutral hadron events that do produce this signal-like
 1996 topology and deposit at least 500 GeV in the calorimeter, a three-track control region is used. This
 1997 is due to low statistics in the case of signal-like two-track events.

1998 Three-track events are studied where a parent muon enters FASER, interacts to produce a
 1999 neutral hadron, and produces two decay products of the neutral hadron. The ratio of events with
 2000 a calorimeter energy below 100 GeV to the number of events with a calorimeter energy above 500
 2001 GeV is used to scale the number of events with two reconstructed tracks at low energy ($E < 100$
 2002 GeV) where the parent muon does not enter the detector, in order to estimate the expected number
 2003 of such two-track events originating from neutral hadrons in the signal region ($E > 500$ GeV).

2004 To further improve statistics in the low-energy two-track control region, the veto scintillator
 2005 requirements used in the main analysis are relaxed such that no signal is required in VetoNu but
 2006 no requirements are placed on the other Veto scintillators.

2007 A large fraction of three-track events are made up of photon conversions, which must be removed

Table 6.3: Summary of the neutral hadron estimate method targeting two and three-track events.

Selection	Nevents $E < 100$ GeV	Nevents $E > 500$ GeV
3 tracks (VetoNu signal)	404	19
2 tracks (No VetoNu signal)	1	Predicted: 0.047

2008 from the dataset. This is achieved by placing a requirement on the E/p ratio, the calorimeter
 2009 energy divided by the z -momentum of the **2-track** system. A requirement of $E/p < 0.7$ separates
 2010 the hadrons from the conversion events. After the removal of these photon conversion events, the
 2011 number of three-track events is 404 and 19 in the low and high calorimeter energy bins, as shown
 2012 in Table 6.3. This ratio of 19/404 is used to scale the 1 event in the low energy two-track region to
 2013 the high energy signal-like region, resulting in a prediction of 0.047 neutral hadron events in this
 2014 region. Further scaling to obtain the actual signal region estimate must be performed to account
 2015 for the relaxed requirement on the veto scintillators. The fraction of 3-track events in which 1 track
 2016 goes through the veto system is 0.0184. This results in a final neutral hadron estimate in the signal
 2017 region of $(0.8 \pm 1.2) \times 10^{-3}$ events. An uncertainty of 100% comes from the single event in the
 2018 low-energy 2-track control region. The additional uncertainty is due to the uncertainty associated
 2019 with assumptions made in this method.

2020 6.3.3 Inefficiency of the Veto Scintillators

2021 The expected number of muons crossing through the FASER volume in the dataset considered for
 2022 this analysis is of the order of 10^8 . The efficiency of the five individual veto scintillators is described
 2023 in Chapter 3.3.2 and is greater than 99.99%, resulting in a combined inefficiency of 10^{-27} . The
 2024 expected background of muons crossing FASER without being vetoed by any of the scintillator
 2025 stations is therefore below 10^{-18} , showing this component of background to be negligible.

2026 6.3.4 Large-angle Muons

2027 As discussed above, one of the potentially source of backgrounds arises from muons coming from
 2028 the IP that miss the veto stations but still enter FASER, depositing charge in the timing scintillator
 2029 and tracks in the spectrometer. Such muons with an angle of around 40 mrad can miss both veto
 2030 scintillator stations.

Table 6.4: Cutflow for large-angle muon background in the case of a veto signal (top) and no veto signal (bottom).

Selection	Input	Pass	Effic.	Cum. Effic.
Veto Signal				
No timing saturation	800000	799877	99.9%	99.9%
Veto/VetoNu Signal	799877	195651	24.5%	24.5%
Timing Signal	195651	24946	12.8%	3.12%
Preshower Signal	24946	9878	39.6%	1.24%
≥ 1 good track	9878	1258	12.7%	0.157%
= 2 good tracks	1258	0	0.00%	0.00%
No Veto Signal				
No timing saturation	800000	799877	99.9%	99.9%
No VetoNu Signal	799877	655829	81.9%	82.0%
No Veto Signal	655829	604226	92.1%	75.5%
Timing Signal	604226	26519	4.39%	3.32%
Preshower Signal	26519	8893	33.5%	1.11%
≥ 1 good track	8893	96	1.08%	0.012%
= 2 good tracks	96	0	0.000%	0.00%

2031 Dedicated MC samples are used to confirm that there is no component of background arising
2032 from large-angle muons. The resulting sample consists of 800k muons and is described in Chapter
2033 5.3.2, of which no events have two good tracks either with or without a veto signal, see Table 6.4.
2034 When requiring no veto signal, only 96 events have even 1 track with none passing the fiducial
2035 requirements. Before any signal selection requirements, the reconstructed calorimeter energy spec-
2036 trum shows no events above 50 GeV, suggesting that the background from large-angle muons is
2037 negligible.

2038 To avoid relying on an approach based on purely MC prediction, a data-driven method conven-
2039 tionally referred to as an ABCD **method** can be used to validate the estimation of large-angle muon
2040 background. The ABCD method [140] relies on the assumption that the distribution of background
2041 events can be factorised in the plane of two uncorrelated variables so that it is divided into four
2042 regions: A (the signal region, SR), B, C, and D (control regions, CRs). The number of background
2043 events in the SR can be evaluated as $N_A = N_C \times N_B / N_D$. To define the various regions, the two
2044 variables used are the calorimeter EM energy and the requirement that there is or is not a signal
2045 in the veto stations above 40 pC.

2046 Data events categorised in both the signal region and control regions defined in Figure 6.7 are
2047 selected with the following requirements:

- 2048 • Preshower signal selection: The charge in each preshower layer > 2.5 pC
- 2049 • At least one good track (1+ track) selection
- 2050 • Timing signal selection: The signal in the timing scintillator is consistent with 1 MIP

2051 The ABCD plane is defined considering a 1+ good track selection rather than a 2-track selection
2052 as in the final analysis, this is to overcome a substantial lack in statistics in the control regions. In
2053 addition, events are required to have a track with extrapolated radius at the first veto station greater
2054 than 90 mm, and an extrapolated track angle θ_X and θ_Y at veto station 1 greater than 10 mrad.
2055 Such strict requirements on track angle and radius lead to selected events with a deposited energy in
2056 the calorimeter that is most likely to be equivalent to what would be expected from the background
2057 muon events of interest, whilst excluding regions populated by other sources of background.

2058 The ABCD plane is divided to include intermediate regions to be used as validation regions
2059 (A^* , B^*). In this case, given that the Veto signal/No Veto signal variable cannot be split, additional
2060 regions are defined in terms of the calorimeter EM energy.

2061 Events in the “No Signal in Veto Station” (SR A, VR A^* , CR C in Figure 6.7), are referred to
2062 as NoVeto and are required to pass the No VetoNu signal and No Veto signal selections defined in
2063 the event selection for this analysis. On the other hand, events in the “Signal in Veto Station” (SR
2064 B, VR B^* , CR D in Figure 6.7) are referred as Veto and are required to have charges in all veto
2065 stations > 40 pC.

2066 The basic assumption that motivates the use of the VetoNu and Veto scintillator charge as
2067 variables in this method, is that a muon that misses the veto stations but still creates a signal-like
2068 topology will resemble a signal which is within FASER’s acceptance and does not fire the veto
2069 stations.

2070 To guarantee the validity of an ABCD method it is assumed that the variables defining the plane
2071 are uncorrelated and that the composition of background events is the same across all regions, such
2072 that the ratio $N_A/N_B \simeq N_C/N_D$. Multiple thresholds are used to define regions in term of the
2073 calorimeter EM energy that are considered as control and validation regions following the logic

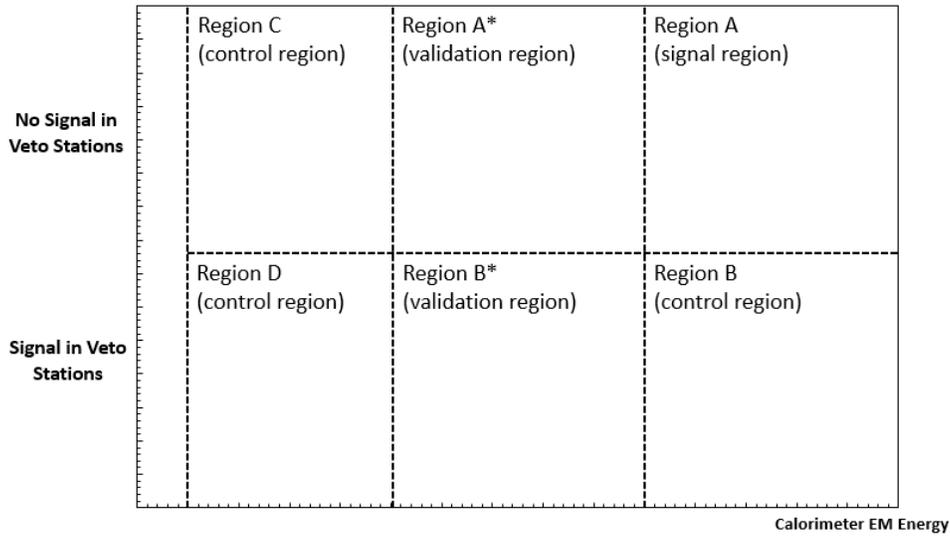


Figure 6.7: The ABCD background estimation method showing the control regions, validation regions and signal regions used to validate the large-angle muon estimate in the dark photon analysis.

2074 below:

- 2075 • The range 10-25 GeV is used to define the initial control regions C and D;
- 2076 • The range 25-50 GeV is first used as validation region and then merged to be used as a control
2077 region in the range 10-50 GeV (initial validation regions A* and B*);
- 2078 • The range 50-100 GeV is first used as validation region and then merged to be used as a
2079 control region in the range 10-100 GeV (extended validation regions A* and B*);
- 2080 • The range 100-500 GeV is used as a validation region post-unblinding and then merged to be
2081 used as a control region

2082 Table 6.5 shows the number of events for each of the regions considered above before any
2083 scaling. The statistical uncertainty of the prediction will be driven by the statistics of the Veto
2084 region corresponding to the same energy range of the SR. As there is only 1 event in this region,
2085 the uncertainty is 100%. It is still useful to calculate the various cases and compare the predictions
2086 obtained depending on the range used for the control regions C and D.

2087 The scaling from the 1+ to the 2-track selection used in the main event selection is evaluated
2088 by scaling the ABCD-method prediction by the ratio between the number of events found in a

Regions	Energy Range				
	10-25 GeV	25-50 GeV	50-100 GeV	100-500 GeV	500 GeV
NoVeto	31	1	0	0	0
Veto	724	74	2	1	1

Table 6.5: Event yields in the various regions. Note: number of events as found using a 30 pC window for a single track.

2089 Veto-region with EM energy between 10-50 GeV and two tracks, and the yields in the 1+ Veto
2090 region in the same EM energy range. The 2-track selection is the same as in the signal region of
2091 this analysis, but it also requires that at least one track has radius above 90 mm and angle greater
2092 than 10 mrad .

2093 The scaling factor for 1+ to 2-track selection is calculated by dividing the 798 events in the
2094 10-50 GeV 1+ track Veto region by the 3 events in the corresponding 2-track Veto region. Resulting
2095 in a scaling of 0.00376.

2096 Table 6.6 shows the expected and observed yields for various signal-like regions (25-50, 50-100
2097 and 100-500 GeV) and the signal region, calculated either using the lowest ranges for C, D regions,
2098 or using an intermediate or extended validation region that incorporates the previous one(s). This
2099 table shows the calculated predictions after scaling has been applied.

2100 The predicted number of events for the fully unblinded validation region, taken as the one with
2101 calorimeter EM energy between 25 and 50 GeV, is 3.2 ± 0.5 , compared with 1 observed event. For
2102 the following range (50-100 GeV), the prediction for the fully unblinded validation region is between
2103 0.03 ± 0.02 and 0.09 ± 0.06 , depending on the regions taken as control regions. This is consistent with
2104 the observation of no events. The predictions for the regions 100-500 GeV is 0.04 ± 0.04 . The same
2105 prediction is found for the SR when considering the whole range below 100 GeV as regions C and
2106 D: this can be considered a conservative upper bound for this source of background.

2107 The background prediction for the 2-track signal region therefore takes the control region pre-
2108 diction of 0.04 and scales it to 1.5×10^{-4} , with an uncertainty up to 100%. This is consistent with
2109 the above estimation from MC, therefore, this study can be used to validate the above method of
2110 estimation and confirm that this source of background is negligible.

ABCD region/method	Predicted	Observed
$N_{25-50,noVeto} = N_{25-50,Veto} \times \frac{N_{10-25,NoVeto}}{N_{10-25,Veto}}$	3.2 ± 0.5	1
$N_{50-100,noVeto} = N_{50-100,Veto} \times \frac{N_{10-25,NoVeto}}{N_{10-25,Veto}}$	0.09 ± 0.06	0
$N_{50-100,noVeto} = N_{50-100,Veto} \times \frac{N_{25-50,NoVeto}}{N_{25-50,Veto}}$	0.03 ± 0.02	0
$N_{50-100,noVeto} = N_{50-100,Veto} \times \frac{N_{10-50,NoVeto}}{N_{10-50,Veto}}$	0.08 ± 0.06	0
$N_{100-500,noVeto} = N_{100-500,Veto} \times \frac{N_{10-25,NoVeto}}{N_{10-25,Veto}}$	0.04 ± 0.04	0
$N_{100-500,noVeto} = N_{100-500,Veto} \times \frac{N_{25-50,NoVeto}}{N_{25-50,Veto}}$	0.01 ± 0.01	0
$N_{100-500,noVeto} = N_{100-500,Veto} \times \frac{N_{10-50,NoVeto}}{N_{10-50,Veto}}$	0.04 ± 0.04	0
$N_{100-500,noVeto} = N_{100-500,Veto} \times \frac{N_{50-100,NoVeto}}{N_{50-100,Veto}}$	0	0
$N_{100-500,noVeto} = N_{100-500,Veto} \times \frac{N_{10-100,NoVeto}}{N_{10-100,Veto}}$	0.04 ± 0.04	0

Table 6.6: Calculations and predictions for intermediate validation regions and for the final signal regions. In the former case, various ranges are used as test. For the SR, only the integrated 10-500 GeV region is used for the predictions. The uncertainty in 100% due to the Veto region in the range 100-500 GeV having only 1 event. **Post-unblinding:** in bold, the observed events (0) in both validation and signal regions.

2111 6.3.5 Non-collision Backgrounds

2112 Due to FASER's location in TI12, background can arise due to interactions of the nearby LHC
2113 beam. In addition, despite being 100 m underground, the interactions of cosmic ray muons must
2114 be considered. The following sections demonstrate that all non-collision background is negligible
2115 in this analysis.

2116 6.3.5.1 Background due to cosmic ray muons

2117 Most high-energy cosmic ray muons will have been absorbed by the surrounding rock and concrete
2118 before reaching FASER, however, it is possible that these particles could survive the selections
2119 used in this analysis. Cosmic ray muon events are recorded during time with no beam in the LHC
2120 to ensure no physics events are collected. The cosmic ray data is collected over a period that is
2121 roughly equivalent to the length of physics data-taking used in this analysis, around 300 hours. In
2122 the collected cosmic ray dataset, no events with a good track were found. In addition, Figure 6.8
2123 shows that none of these events had a calorimeter energy deposit greater than 100 GeV or had any
2124 tracks, and so are far removed from the signal region for the dark photon analysis. This cosmic ray
2125 background can therefore be considered negligible.

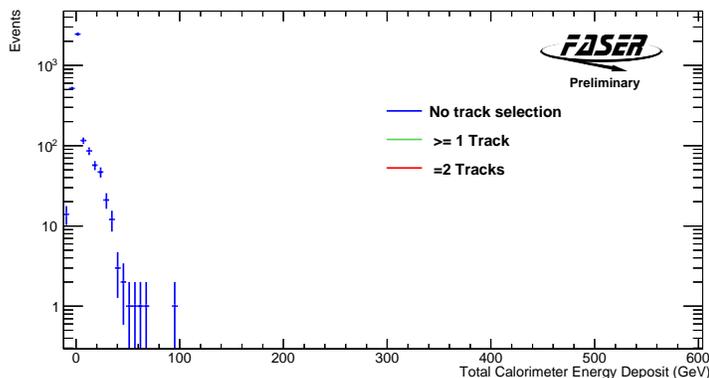


Figure 6.8: The calorimeter energy distribution of cosmic muon events with various track requirements. Few events survive the veto scintillator selection. No events survive the requirement of at least one good track.

2126 6.3.5.2 Beam 1 Background

2127 Background from LHC beam 1 is the result of secondary particles produced when beam 1, passing
 2128 FASER towards the ATLAS IP, interacts with beampipe material, such as an LHC quadrupole
 2129 magnet located close to FASER. The data to evaluate this background is collected by taking events
 2130 with colliding BCIDs that overlap with BCID timings of the inbound LHC beam 1 passing FASER.

2131 Figure 6.9 shows that none of the events that survive the veto scintillator selection have at least
 2132 one good track. Furthermore, zero events have a calorimeter energy above 400 GeV. Therefore,
 2133 this component of background can be considered negligible.

2134 6.3.6 Summary of Total Expected Background

2135 A summary of the total background estimate in this analysis is shown in Table 6.7. Components
 2136 from large-angle muons, inefficiencies from the veto scintillators, and non-collision backgrounds
 2137 are considered to be negligible. Therefore, the background estimate in the signal region is due to
 2138 neutral hadrons and interactions from neutrinos. When combined, the total background estimate

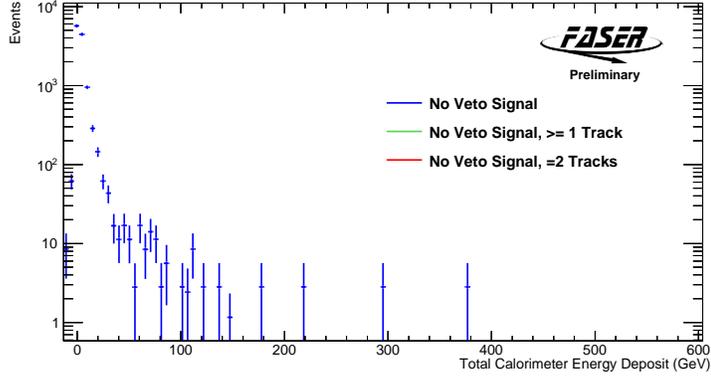


Figure 6.9: The calorimeter energy distribution of beam 1 background events with various track requirements. Few events survive the veto scintillator selection. No events survive the requirement of at least one good track.

2139 is $(2.3 \pm 2.3) \times 10^{-3}$ (100%).

2140 6.4 Systematic Uncertainties

2141 This section describes the various sources of systematic uncertainties that are relevant to signal.

2142 This is a cut-and-count analysis, therefore, the systematic uncertainties are related to the signal

2143 yield, rather than shape uncertainty. These systematic uncertainties are implemented as nuisance

Table 6.7: Summary of the different sources of background considered in this analysis and the total estimate, with uncertainty.

Source	Background	Uncertainty
Neutrino	1.5×10^{-3}	2.0×10^{-3} (130%)
Neutral Hadrons	0.8×10^{-3}	1.2×10^{-3} (140%)
Veto Inefficiency	-	-
Large-angle Muons	-	-
Non-collision Backgrounds	-	-
Total	2.3×10^{-3}	2.3×10^{-3} (100%)

2144 parameters in the model-dependent fit performed in the statistical interpretation of the results of
 2145 this analysis, this is explained in Chapter 5.4.1. The main sources of systematic uncertainty are
 2146 categorised into theory, experimental and statistical uncertainties. The theory uncertainty is the
 2147 uncertainty associated with the MC generators used to simulate signal and background processes.
 2148 The experimental uncertainties include those which arise due to MC modelling, tracking efficiency
 2149 and measurement uncertainties. There is also a statistical uncertainty derived from MC statistics,
 2150 calculated from the standard deviation of the sum of the weights of each MC sample.

2151 **6.4.1 Signal Theory Uncertainties**

2152 Theory uncertainties arise due to the systematic uncertainties from the differences in the MC
 2153 generator predictions used to simulate the signal in this analysis. The systematic uncertainty
 2154 associated with the generation of the dark photon signal is derived by comparing the signal yields
 2155 from the central MC prediction provided by the EPOS-LHC generator with the signal yields from
 2156 QGSJET and SIBYLL. The envelope provides an uncertainty on the number of signal events and
 2157 also on the uncertainty on the signal prediction due to the modelling of the cutoff in transverse
 2158 momentum for dark bremsstrahlung with the different generators. Such uncertainty on the signal
 2159 is parameterised and can be defined as:

$$\frac{\Delta N}{N} = \frac{0.15 + (E_{A'}/4 \text{ TeV})^3}{1 + (E_{A'}/4 \text{ TeV})^3}, \quad (6.1)$$

2160 where $E_{A'}$ is the energy of the dark photon. Figure 6.10 shows the energy spectrum of a dark
 2161 photon with mass 50 MeV and coupling $\epsilon = 3 \times 10^{-5}$ produced in meson decays whose production
 2162 is modelled by the three different generators. The production due to bremsstrahlung is shown, with
 2163 a factor of two variation in the p_T cutoff. The parameterisation of this uncertainty has been tested
 2164 for signal samples encompassing the entire phase space that is relevant to this analysis.

2165 **6.4.2 Experimental Uncertainties**

2166 The experimental uncertainties in this analysis are the systematic uncertainties related to the
 2167 modelling of the detector response in MC simulation. This includes the uncertainty associated
 2168 with the scintillators, the calorimeter and the tracker. Another experimental uncertainty is the

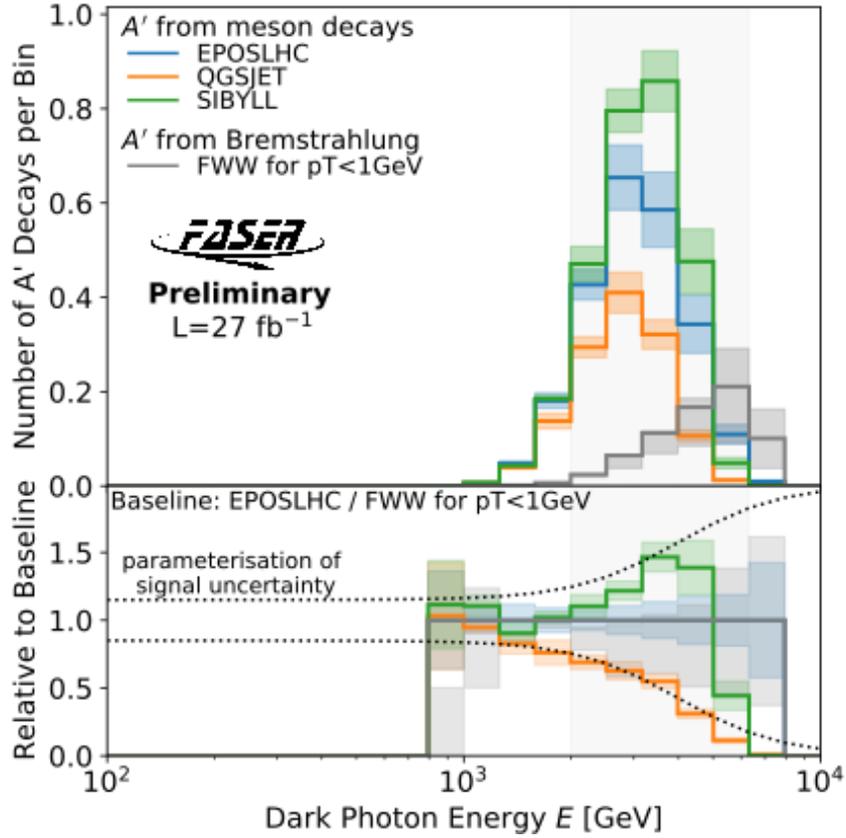


Figure 6.10: The energy spectrum of a dark photon signal with mass 50 MeV and coupling $\epsilon = 3 \times 10^{-5}$ produced in meson decays whose production is modelled by the EPOS-LHC (blue), QGSJET (orange) and SIBYLL (green) generators. The production due to bremsstrahlung is shown in grey, with a factor of two variation in the p_T cutoff. The bottom panel shows the ratio of the different generator estimates with the parameterisation of the uncertainty as a function of signal energy.

2169 2.2% uncertainty on the luminosity measurement from ATLAS [138, 82].

2170 **6.4.2.1 Scintillator Systematic Uncertainty**

2171 The systematic uncertainties associated with the veto scintillators are considered negligible due to
2172 the almost 100% efficiency of the five individual scintillator layers upstream of the decay volume.

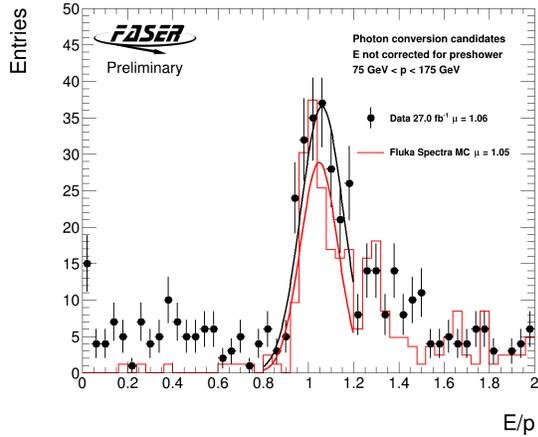
2173 In order to evaluate the systematic uncertainty associated with the remaining scintillators (tim-
2174 ing scintillator and preshower scintillators), the fraction of two-track events that are rejected by the
2175 requirements on these scintillators is measured. The timing and preshower scintillator efficiencies
2176 were found to be greater than 99.7% in both data and MC. The effect on the signal yield is less than
2177 1%, therefore, it is not necessary to place on uncertainty on these scintillator charge requirements.

2178 **6.4.2.2 Calorimeter Systematic Uncertainty**

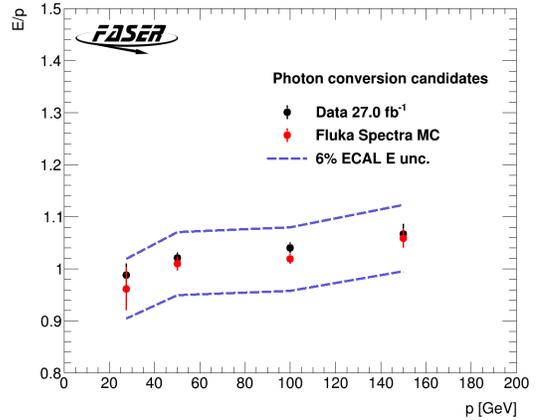
2179 The uncertainty associated with the threshold applied to the EM calorimeter energy as part of the
2180 event selection in this analysis is calculated from the individual uncertainties in the various stages
2181 of the energy calibration process, for both data and MC. Uncertainties arise from the MIP MPV
2182 Landau fit, the PMT HV gain dependence, the drift in the PMTs over time, the corrections in data
2183 and MC calibration, the difference in the average calibrated energy in test beam data and MC,
2184 and other components from energy loss at the calorimeter module edges and position dependence.
2185 A breakdown of all of these measured uncertainties, which result in the total uncertainty associated
2186 with the calorimeter, are shown in Table A.1 in Appendix A.2. The total uncertainty associated
2187 with the calorimeter energy measurement is estimated to be 6%.

2188 The uncertainty on the calorimeter energy selection is validated in **data** by comparing the
2189 calorimeter response in data and FLUKA MC in the case of photon conversion events. Photon
2190 conversions are isolated from three-track high-energy muon events in which the muon traverses
2191 FASER and the resulting photon converts to a e^+e^- pair. The ratio E/p of photon conversions is
2192 measured in data and compared to MC, where E is the EM energy in the calorimeter, and p is the
2193 measured track momentum of these e^+e^- candidates. The selection **carried out** in order to isolate
2194 these photon conversion events in data is as follows:

- 2195 • Require 3 good tracks



(a)



(b)

Figure 6.11: (a) The E/p distribution for photon conversion events with $75 \text{ GeV} < p < 175 \text{ GeV}$ for data and FLUKA MC. (b) The fitted E/p peak values for various momentum ranges: $20 \text{ GeV} < p < 30 \text{ GeV}$, $35 \text{ GeV} < p < 75 \text{ GeV}$, $75 \text{ GeV} < p < 125 \text{ GeV}$, $125 \text{ GeV} < p < 175 \text{ GeV}$. The E/p ratio is centred around one, and the agreement between data and MC is well within the 6.06% uncertainty across the momentum range.

- 2196 • Require that the two lowest momentum tracks were oppositely charged (to target e^+e^- events)
- 2197 • Require a ratio in the preshower scintillator layers of greater than 2 (removes 90% of non-
- 2198 conversion events with $E/p < 0.5$)

2199 Ideally, the E/p distribution should be centred around one, indicating that the selection cor-
 2200 rectly targets EM events, and that the calorimeter calibration is as expected. The relative difference
 2201 in the E/p ratio in data and MC is well within the 6% uncertainty across a range of track momen-
 2202 tum, this is shown in Figure 6.11.

2203 6.4.2.3 Tracking Systematic Uncertainty

2204 The uncertainty associated with single-track efficiency is evaluated by investigating events with at
 2205 least one good track segment in each of the spectrometer's three tracking stations. Comparing the
 2206 single-track efficiency in data and MC leads to an uncertainty of 1.5% per track.

2207 The process of reconstructing tracks in two-track events is more complex, particularly in the case
 2208 of two closely-spaced tracks, as is likely given the dark photon decay. It is possible that tracks from

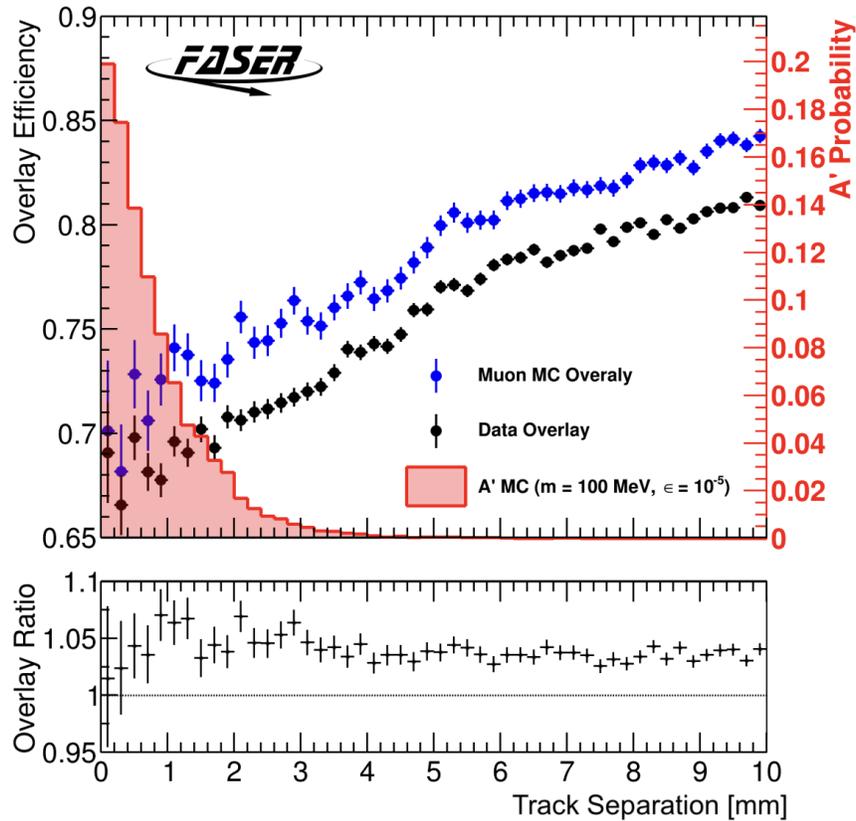


Figure 6.12: Top panel: The two track reconstruction efficiency as a function of track separation for single, overlaid tracks in both data and FLUKA MC. Shown in red is the track separation of e^+e^- tracks in a representative A' signal sample. Bottom panel: The ratio of the reconstruction efficiency of these overlaid events in data and MC.

2209 different events could share common hits in the tracking stations making reconstruction difficult.
 2210 To measure the uncertainty associated with the reconstruction of two-track events, the raw strip
 2211 data of high momentum single track events is overlaid with the hits from the full event. This mimics
 2212 signal-like events with real data and this process can be carried out in MC with single muon events
 2213 for direct comparison. The reconstruction efficiency as a function of track separation in data and
 2214 MC is shown in Figure 6.12. The ratio of the efficiency between data and MC, as a function of the
 2215 distance between the two tracks, is used to assess the uncertainty. At track separations equivalent
 2216 to what is expected in a typical dark photon decay, the efficiency in data is up to 7% less than in
 2217 MC simulation. A 7% correction is, therefore, applied to the two-track reconstruction efficiency,
 2218 and this value is taken as the overall uncertainty.

2219 The uncertainty associated with the momentum resolution and momentum scale is estimated

Table 6.8: Summary of the track scale, and resolution variations in MC and compared to data.

Sample	Scale Mass peak (MeV)	Resolution Peak width (MeV)
Data	503	51
MC	514	39
MC (5% variation)	489	57
MC (10% variation)	463	88

2220 with a conservative assumption of 5% uncertainty. By comparing the mass peak in photon con-
 2221 version events in data and MC, a shift of 5% more than accounts for the difference in the position
 2222 of the photon conversion peak in data and MC. The shift in the mass peak and resolution due
 2223 to a 5% and 10% smearing of the momentum in MC, compared to data is shown in Table 6.8.
 2224 It can therefore be concluded that this conservative uncertainty of 5% is sufficient for both track
 2225 momentum resolution and track momentum scale.

2226 6.4.3 A Summary of Systematic Uncertainties

2227 A comprehensive overview of the various sources of systematic uncertainty in the search for dark
 2228 photons is given in Table 6.9. The effect of each systematic uncertainty on the signal yield is shown,
 2229 the dominant source of systematic uncertainty is the parameterised uncertainty associated with the
 2230 dark photon signal event generator.

2231 6.5 Results

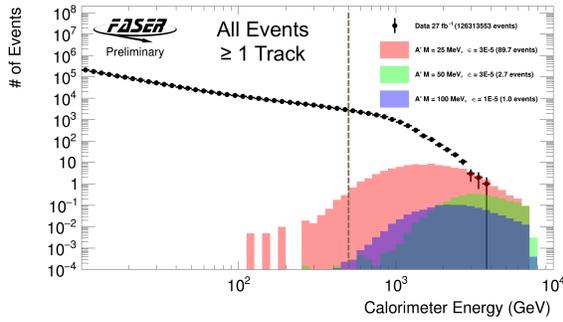
2232 Once the signal efficiency and background estimates with uncertainties were evaluated, data were
 2233 unblinded and no events were found to pass the event selection. This is consistent with the total
 2234 expected background of 2.3×10^{-3} events expected in the signal region, with an uncertainty of
 2235 100%. Figure 6.13 shows the calorimeter energy distribution of events with at least one track,
 2236 with no selection applied to data (left) and the case where the veto scintillator charge requirement
 2237 of <40 pC is applied (right). This selection drastically reduces the number of data events, and
 2238 comparison with three representative A' MC signal points demonstrates that the energy of the
 2239 data events that survive the selection is far below the eventual signal region. Figure 6.14 shows
 2240 the same distribution in data but with the application of all signal region selections, including the

Table 6.9: Summary of the various sources of signal uncertainty, the size of the uncertainty and the range of the effect of this uncertainty on the signal yield across the parameter space. For the latter, the numbers in parenthesis indicate the effect on signals in the new exclusion reach with this analysis. The error on the MC statistics is calculated using the standard deviation of the sum of the weights (W) of each sample. The systematic uncertainty is dominated by the uncertainty on the signal generators.

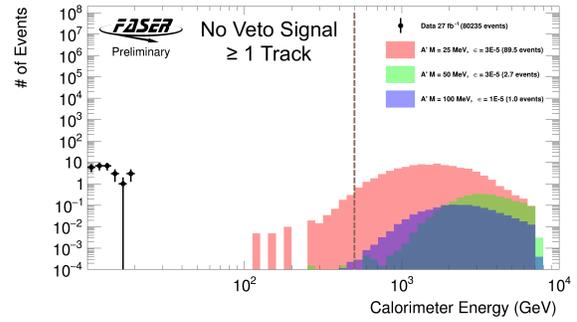
Source	Value	Effect on signal yield
A' Signal Generator	$\frac{0.15+(E_{A'}/4\text{TeV})^3}{1+(E_{A'}/4\text{TeV})^3}$	15-65% (15-45%)
Luminosity	2.2%	2.2%
MC Statistics	$\sqrt{\sum W^2}$	1-3% (1-2%)
Single track efficiency	3%	3%
Two-track efficiency	7%	7%
Track Momentum Scale	5%	<5%
Track Momentum Resolution	5%	<5%
Calorimeter Energy scale	6%	0-8% (<1%)

2241 two-track requirement.

2242 Since no **significant excess is observed** in the signal region, exclusion limits on FASER's sensi-
2243 tivity to this model can be set. The statistical interpretation of the results produces the exclusion
2244 limit shown in Figure 6.15. The HistFitter framework used to produce this limits plot is discussed
2245 in Chapter 5. The results are shown at a 90% confidence level [141], in accordance with previous
2246 searches performed by other experiments with sensitivity in the same parameter space. The grey
2247 regions indicate previous constraints, the details of which are given in Chapter 2. In the dark
2248 photon parameter space that is probed by this analysis, signal models with mass $10 \text{ MeV} < m_{A'} <$
2249 80 MeV and coupling $4 \times 10^{-6} < \epsilon < 2 \times 10^{-4}$ are excluded. World-leading constraints are set by
2250 FASER for signal models in the mass range $17\text{--}70 \text{ MeV}$ and coupling $2 \times 10^{-5} - 1 \times 10^{-4}$. This
2251 can be seen in the region of Figure 6.15 where no previous limits have been set. Of particular inter-
2252 est in this dark photon search is the thermal relic density probed, discussed in Chapter 2, which is
2253 indicated by the red contour in Figure 6.15. The region below the contour would be populated by
2254 an over-abundance of dark matter and thus is ruled out cosmologically. FASER, therefore, probes
2255 a significant amount of phase space in this cosmologically-allowed region [1].



(a)



(b)

Figure 6.13: Calorimeter EM energy distributions showing three representative A' signal samples with (a) all data events with at least one good track (b) data events with at least one good track which also survive the veto scintillator selections outlined in the selection.

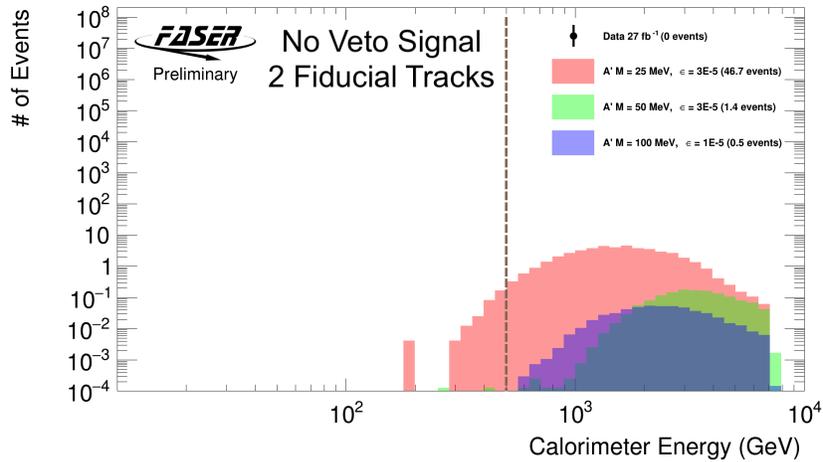


Figure 6.14: Calorimeter EM energy distributions showing three representative A' signal samples showing data events with 2 good tracks that pass all the signal selections. Zero events survive these requirements.

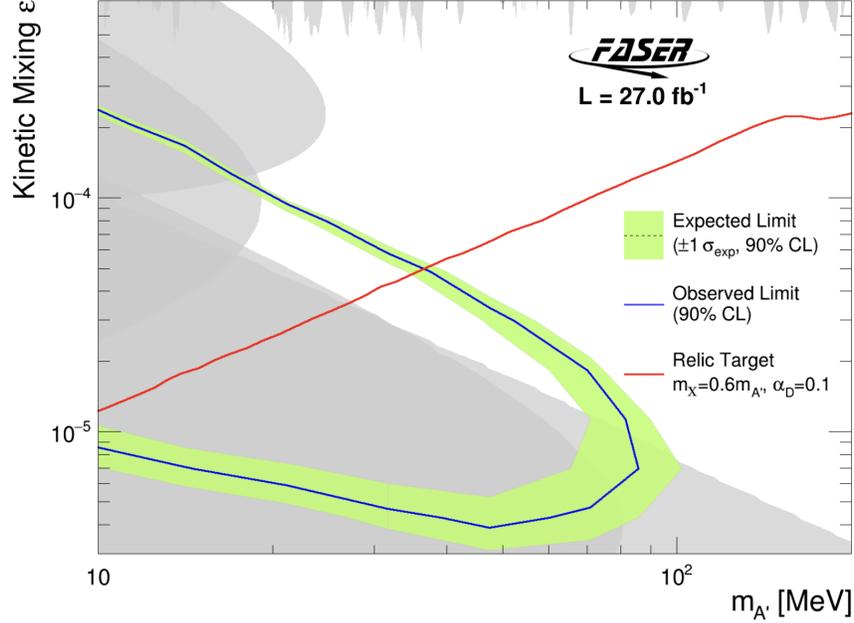


Figure 6.15: Interpretation of the signal region yield as A' exclusion limits with the assumption of 2×10^{-3} background events and zero data events. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey. The thermal relic density target is shown in red.

2256 6.5.1 Reinterpretation: The $B - L$ Gauge Boson

2257 The dark photon analysis can be reinterpreted for the $B - L$ gauge boson [33]. The contour from
 2258 evaluating the CLs values at a 90% confidence level for the $B - L$ gauge boson model is shown
 2259 in Figure 6.16. The analysis probes unconstrained parameter space in the region of $B - L$ gauge
 2260 boson mass around $m_{A'_{B-L}} \sim 15 - 40$ MeV and coupling $g_{B-L} \sim 5 \times 10^{-6} - 2 \times 10^{-5}$.

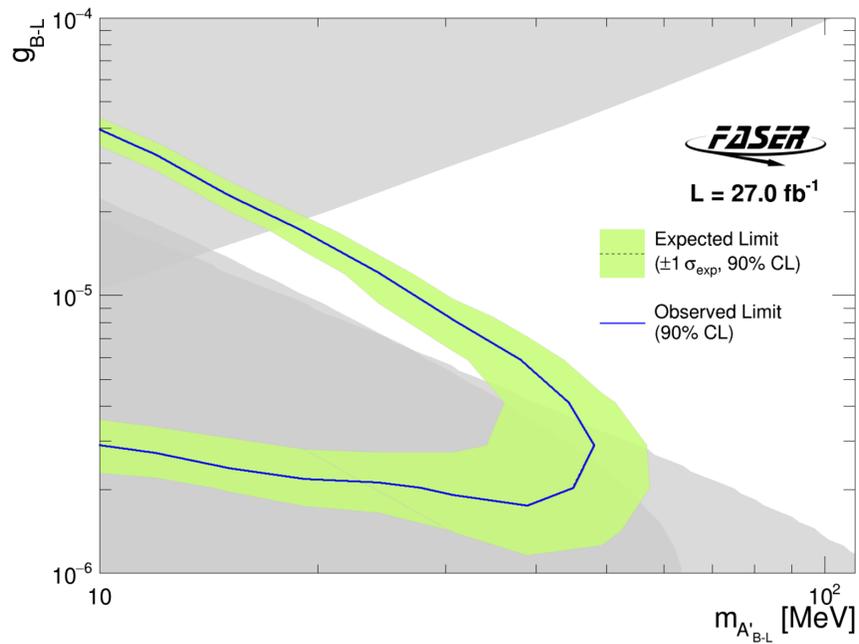


Figure 6.16: Interpretation of the signal region yield as $B - L$ gauge boson exclusion limits. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and green uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.

2261 Chapter 7

2262 The Search for Axion-like Particles

2263 This chapter describes FASER’s search for axion-like particles with 57.7 fb^{-1} of the 2022 and 2023
2264 Run 3 dataset. This analysis searches for a highly energetic di-photon signal characteristic of an
2265 ALP decay within FASER’s decay volume. The parameter space explored in this analysis includes
2266 ALPs with couplings $g_{aWW} \sim 10^{-5} - 10^{-3} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ and masses $m_a \sim 60 \text{ MeV} - 500 \text{ MeV}$. This
2267 analysis has been optimised for the ALP-W signal model, described in Chapter 2. This is a blinded
2268 analysis that uses signal and background yields in the defined signal region.

2269 This chapter will describe: the dataset and signal MC simulation samples used in the analysis;
2270 the event selection applied to data and MC in order to identify the ALP signal; the methods of
2271 SM background estimation, including a prediction of the total background processes present in
2272 the dataset; the evaluation of various systematic uncertainties; the statistical interpretation of the
2273 results of the analysis. The author led analysis efforts, covering numerous aspects including the
2274 definition and optimisation of the signal selection, the estimation of the SM background using both
2275 MC and data-driven approaches, the estimation of signal systematic uncertainties related to the MC
2276 generation, the estimation of the experimental systematic uncertainties related to the calorimeter,
2277 and the statistical interpretation of the final results.

2278 7.1 Dataset and Simulation Samples

2279 This analysis uses Run 3 data at a centre of mass energy of $\sqrt{s} = 13.6 \text{ TeV}$ corresponding to
2280 an integrated luminosity of 57.7 fb^{-1} collected by the FASER experiment during 2022 and 2023

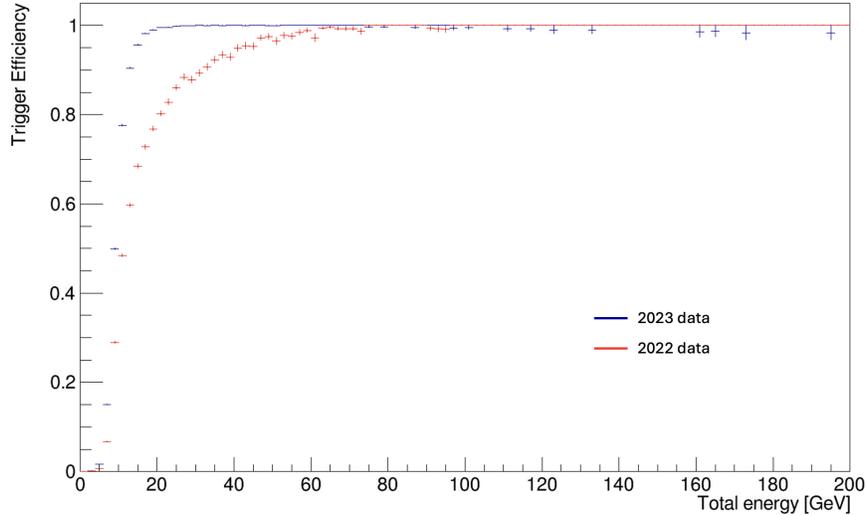


Figure 7.1: Calorimeter trigger efficiency in 2022 vs 2023 data. The calo turn-on curve vs total energy for a large run in 2022 (red) and 2023 (blue).

2281 physics running. The 2022 ALP dataset contains an additional run compared to the A' dataset,
 2282 this is due to a slight change in the determination of recorded luminosity, which pushed a single
 2283 run above the 10 pb^{-1} data quality threshold. The luminosity values are taken from ATLAS, this
 2284 has an associated uncertainty of 2.2% [138, 82, 139], for 2022 and an uncertainty of 2.04% in the
 2285 2023 dataset. This is a small uncertainty compared to other systematic uncertainties associated
 2286 with the signal (see Chapter 7.4), it therefore has a small impact on the final results.

2287 An important note on the differences in the 2022 and 2023 dataset is the change in calorimeter
 2288 trigger efficiency turn-on. There is a clear improvement in the 2023 data due to better trigger
 2289 timing of the calorimeter, resulting in fewer late triggers and a much improved trigger efficiency.
 2290 This is illustrated in Figure 7.1. It can be seen that the trigger efficiency has no impact above 100
 2291 GeV, where both the 2022 and 2023 datasets have very high (close to 100%) trigger efficiency. As
 2292 part of data quality checks, and to confirm that the data and luminosity have been reconstructed
 2293 correctly in the offline processing, the number of events per run that pass the calo trigger (see Table
 2294 3.3) and are in a colliding BCID, with at least 100 GeV in the calorimeter for the 2022 and 2023
 2295 dataset are studied. Figures 7.2 and 7.3 show the number of events per unit luminosity for each
 2296 run that passes these data quality requirements for 2022 and 2023, respectively. The yield plots
 2297 show a stable data yield within 15% for both 2022 and 2023 datasets.

2298 It is required that data is recorded during periods in which the LHC is running in stable beams.

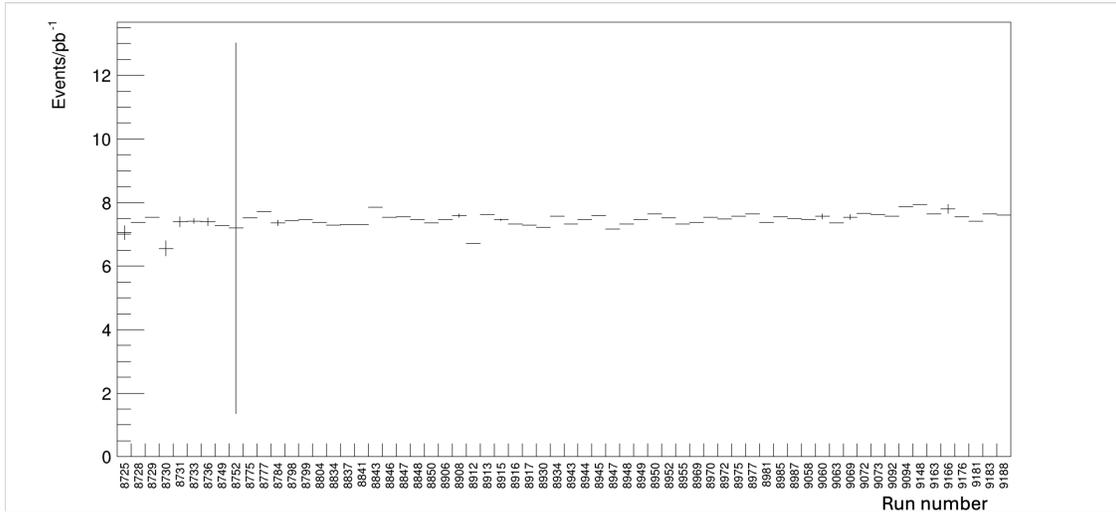


Figure 7.2: Reconstructed events per unit luminosity that pass data quality requirements in the 2022 dataset. Plot shows the total yield of events with calorimeter energy greater than 100 GeV. The large error band seen in run 8752 is due to low statistics for this run (10.3 pb^{-1} recorded).

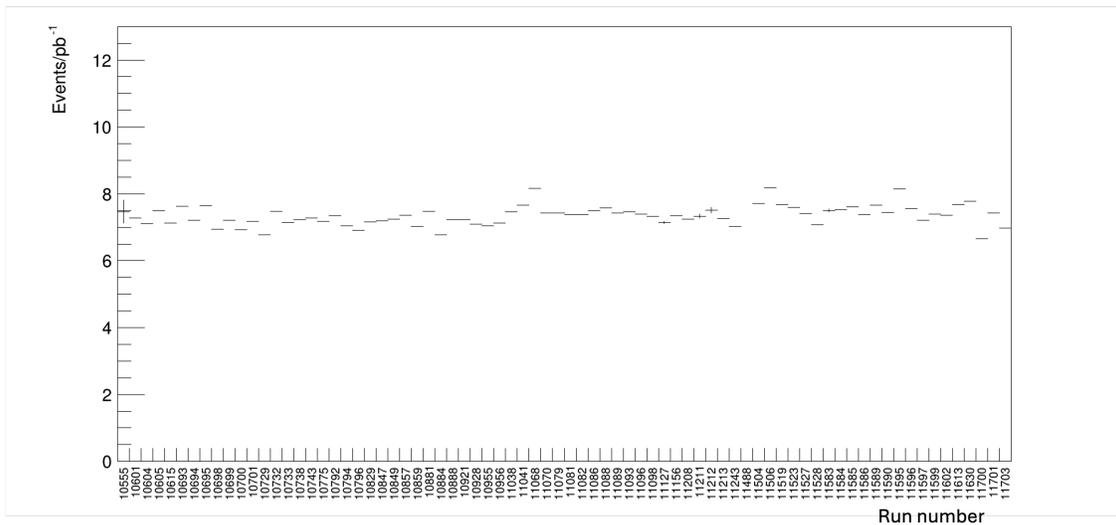


Figure 7.3: Reconstructed events per unit luminosity that pass data quality requirements in the 2023 dataset. Plot shows the total yield of events with calorimeter energy greater than 100 GeV.

Table 7.1: Requirements on data to target physics events and ensure good quality data.

Selection	Description
Stable Beams	Require period of stable beam delivered to LHC
Excluded Times	Remove time regions with potential issues
Colliding BCID	Event corresponds to a colliding bunch
Calo Trigger	Triggers the calorimeter
Calorimeter Timing	Timing in the calorimeter between $> -5\text{ns}$ and $< 10\text{ns}$

2299 The removal of certain time regions is performed for a number of reasons. Notable to this dataset are
 2300 periods when ATLAS stopped their physics running and so did not report the delivered luminosity
 2301 to FASER. An excluded times criteria is also applied to two runs during which FASER experienced
 2302 operational issues related to storage space for raw data. As stated above, for data quality purposes,
 2303 events are required to belong to a colliding BCID and to pass the calo trigger. In addition, the
 2304 timing in each calorimeter module with respect to the expected bunch collision time is required
 2305 to be larger than -5ns and smaller than 10ns in order to remove non-collision background. This
 2306 requirement has no impact on physics signal, but removes non-collision background from beam 1
 2307 with 100% efficiency. Motivation for this requirement can be seen in Figure 7.20 in Section 7.3.5.2.
 2308 A summary of all requirements applied to data to ensure good quality physics events are targeted
 2309 is shown in Table 7.1.

2310 The ALP-W signal points are generated spanning a 2D parameter space across a range of
 2311 couplings $g_{aWW} \sim 10^{-5} - 10^{-3} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ and masses $m_a \sim 60 \text{ MeV} - 500 \text{ MeV}$. The modelled
 2312 parameter spaces covers the expected region of sensitivity and is shown as a function of mass and
 2313 coupling in Figure 7.4. The grey regions indicate previous constraints, the details of which are given
 2314 in Chapter 2. The ALP MC signal samples are modelled in FORESEE and scaled points generated
 2315 in FORESEE and scaled to 57.7 fb^{-1} . Additional simulation samples are used in background
 2316 estimation and studies of the systematic uncertainties. More details are given in Chapter 5.

2317 7.2 Event Selection

2318 A typical ALP signature is shown in Figure 7.5 [2] in which a neutral ALP particle enters the
 2319 detector and deposits no charge in any of the veto scintillator stations. It decays within the FASER

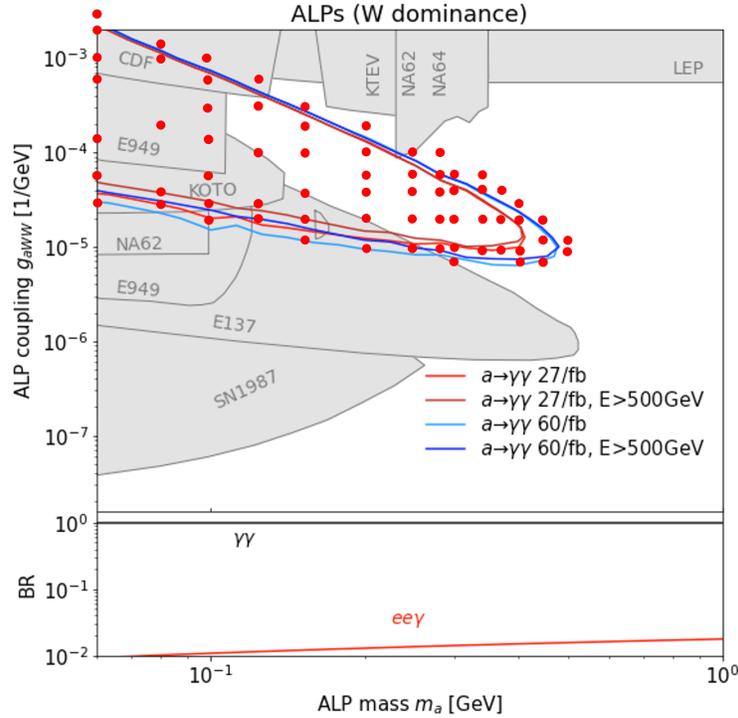


Figure 7.4: ALP-W signal points generated across the parameter space that FASER is sensitive to. Previous limits set by existing experiments are indicated in grey. The projected expected limits in red and blue were produced for 27 fb^{-1} , which is equivalent to the dataset used in the dark photon analysis, and 60 fb^{-1} , which was the initial prediction for the combined 2022 and 2023 dataset used in the ALP search, and close to the final 57.7 fb^{-1} that was recorded. These projections are shown for a zero-background case with a 500 GeV calorimeter energy selection. This is not the case for this analysis, which has a non-zero background expectation and applies a stricter calorimeter energy requirement.

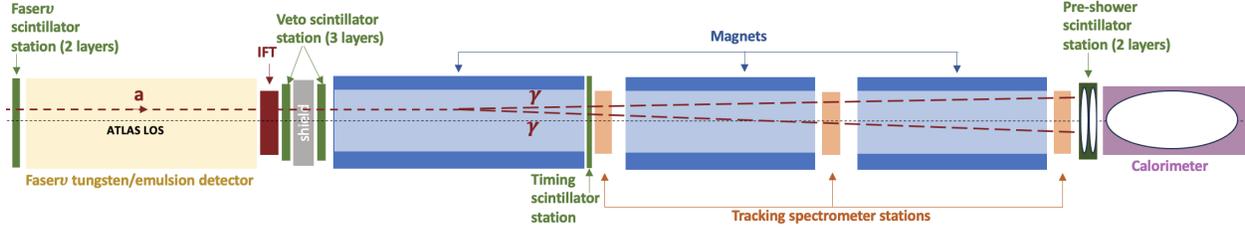


Figure 7.5: A typical ALP signal event traversing FASER. The neutral ALP (dotted line) enters the detector from the left and deposits no charge in any of the veto scintillator stations. It decays within FASER’s decay volume to two highly energetic photons (dashed lines) which also do not leave any charge deposits in the timing scintillator. However, energy deposits will be seen in both preshower layers and in the calorimeter, as the EM shower develops.

2320 decay volume to a highly-energetic di-photon pair, depositing no charge in the timing scintillator
 2321 but significant deposits in the preshower and calorimeter consistent with an EM shower. The
 2322 dominant background in this analysis is high energy neutrinos, variables related to the preshower
 2323 station are vital to distinguish ALP signal with neutrino background.

2324 To avoid any bias affecting the outcome of the analysis, a blinding strategy is initially applied
 2325 to avoid looking at any event with the equivalent of less than a MIP deposited in each of the
 2326 veto scintillators, and with more than 100 GeV EM energy deposited in the calorimeter. During
 2327 the analysis, in order to validate background predictions, this was relaxed to 500 GeV calorimeter
 2328 energy.

2329 The event selection applied to the signal region in this analysis, in addition to the data quality
 2330 requirements already discussed and defined in Table 7.1, is as follows:

- 2331 • No charge is deposited in any of the five veto scintillator stations
 - 2332 – Placing a requirement at a threshold of 40 pC is roughly equivalent to half a MIP signal.
 - 2333 This requirement removes over 99% of the muon background in this analysis
- 2334 • No charge is deposited in the timing scintillator
 - 2335 – In the absence of tracking variable selections in this analysis, the decision was made to
 - 2336 place a requirement that less than 20 pC charge is deposited in the timing scintillator
 - 2337 station that sits at the beginning of FASER’s tracking spectrometer. The idea is that
 - 2338 any event depositing more than 20 pC at this stage is very likely to be a charged muon or
 - 2339 similar unwanted background. A selection at 20 pC lies below the expected MIP signal,

2340 as shown in Figure 7.6a for the 2022 data and Figure 7.6b for the 2023 data. Specifically,
2341 it is required that the raw charge deposit in the top scintillator layer and the bottom
2342 scintillator layer be less than 20 pC

2343 • The event has a ratio of charge deposited in the second and first preshower layers that is
2344 greater than 4.5 (PS ratio > 4.5)

2345 – The preshower detector plays an important role in distinguishing between the photon
2346 signatures of the ALP and any potential background. The ratio of charge deposited in
2347 the preshower layers is used to target the EM behaviour in the preshower

2348 • The event has greater than the equivalent of 10 MIP signals deposited in the second preshower
2349 layer (PS1 nMIP > 10)

2350 – ALP signal events have large deposits in the second preshower layer (PS 1) relative to
2351 the first layer (PS 0), as a result of the showering photons

2352 • The event has a total calorimeter energy greater than 1.5 TeV

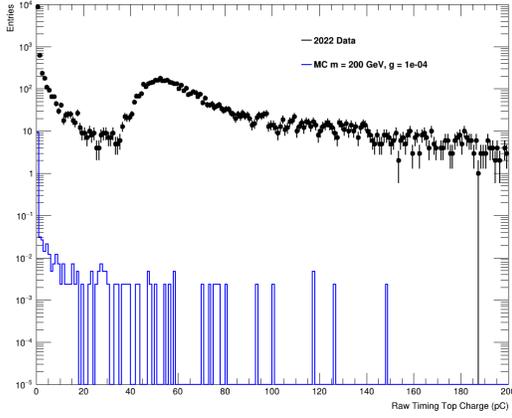
2353 – The ALP signal is expected to have very large deposits in the calorimeter, as shown in
2354 Figure 7.7, significant deposits in the calorimeter also ensures that events with EM-like
2355 behaviour are selected and neutrino background is rejected

2356 The ALP event selection is summarised in Table 7.2. Table 7.3 shows two MC ALP signal points
2357 at different mass and coupling in the parameter space and the efficiency of each of the selections
2358 used in this analysis. The same cutflow is shown in Table 7.4 for the neutrino background MC
2359 prediction.

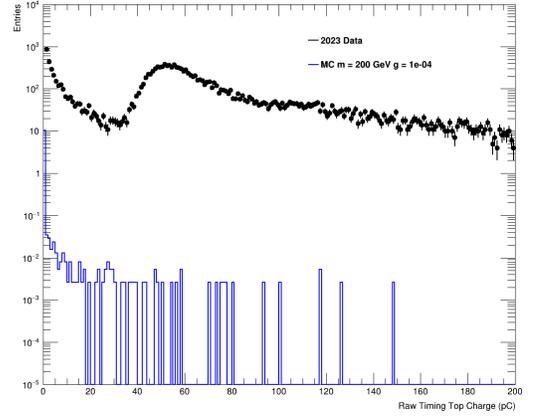
2360 Initial signal optimisation studies were done to investigate the significance of applying a selection
2361 to the calorimeter EM energy. The definition of significance (Z) used in these studies is given by:

$$Z = \frac{s}{\sqrt{b + \sigma_b^2}}, \quad (7.1)$$

2362 where s is the number of signal events, b is the corresponding number of background events, σ_b is
2363 the uncertainty associated with the background (studies were done for 20, 50 and 100% background

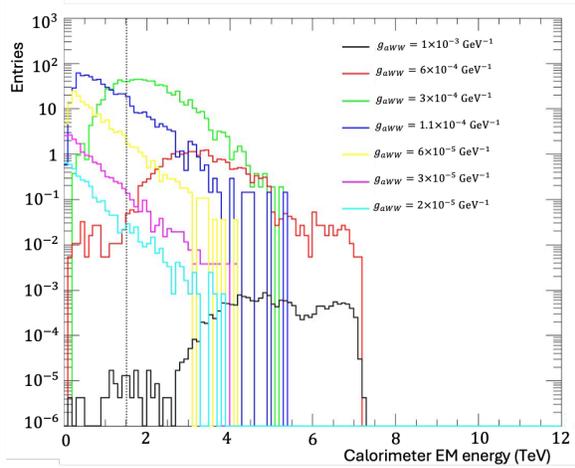


(a)

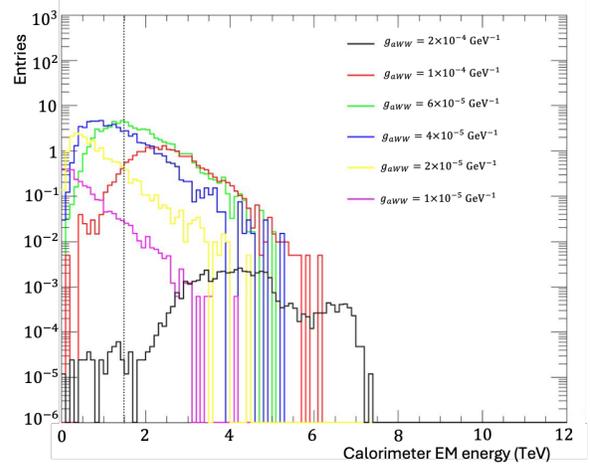


(b)

Figure 7.6: Charge deposited in the top timing scintillator layer. Comparison between data (black) and a representative ALP signal point (blue) with mass 200 GeV and coupling 1×10^{-4} . Shown for (a) the 2022 dataset and (b) the 2023 dataset.



(a)



(b)

Figure 7.7: Calorimeter EM energy distributions for ALP signal models with (a) $m_a = 100$ MeV (b) $m_a = 200$ MeV for a range of different couplings. The calorimeter EM energy threshold of 1.5 TeV is indicated by the dashed line.

Table 7.2: Event selection for the ALPs analysis.

Selection	Description
Baseline Selection	
Veto Signal < 40 pC Timing Signal < 20 pC	Veto and VetoNu Scintillator Charge < 40 pC Timing Scintillator Charge < 20 pC
Signal Region	
PS Ratio > 4.5 PS1 nMIP > 10 Calo E > 1.5 TeV	Preshower Ratio (Layer 1/Layer 0) > 4.5 Preshower Layer 1 nMIP > 10 Calorimeter EM energy > 1500 GeV

Table 7.3: MC cutflow for representative ALP-W signal points with mass 120 MeV and coupling $g_{aWW} = 3 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ and mass 100 MeV and coupling $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$, showing number of signal events entering and passing each selection, along with the efficiency and the cumulative efficiency to that point. The signal yield is scaled for 57.7 fb^{-1} .

Selection	Input	Pass	Effic.	Cum. Effic.
$m_a = 120 \text{ MeV}, g_{aWW} = 3 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$				
Veto Signal < 40 pC	115.7	115.4	99.7%	99.7%
Timing Signal < 20 pC	115.4	111.1	96.2%	96.0%
PS Ratio > 4.5	111.1	94.4	85.0%	81.6%
PS1 nMIP > 10	94.4	93.4	98.9%	80.7%
Calo E > 1.5 TeV	93.4	88.3	94.5%	76.3%
$m_a = 100 \text{ MeV}, g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$				
Veto Signal < 40 pC	147.8	147.6	99.9%	99.9%
Timing Signal < 20 pC	147.6	144.8	98.1%	97.9%
PS Ratio > 4.5	144.8	114.4	79.0%	77.4%
PS1 nMIP > 10	114.4	108.3	94.7%	73.3%
Calo E > 1.5 TeV	108.3	8.72	8.09%	5.90%

Table 7.4: Cutflow for the neutrino background MC prediction. The background yield is scaled for 57.7 fb^{-1} .

Selection	Input	Pass	Effic.	Cum. Effic.
Veto Signal < 40 pC	16075.9	7478.0	46.5%	46.5%
Timing Signal < 20 pC	7478.0	5060.1	67.7%	31.5%
PS Ratio > 4.5	5060.1	278.4	5.50%	1.73%
PS1 nMIP > 10	278.4	84.5	30.4%	0.526%
Calo E > 1.5 TeV	84.5	0.415	0.491%	$2.58 \times 10^{-3}\%$

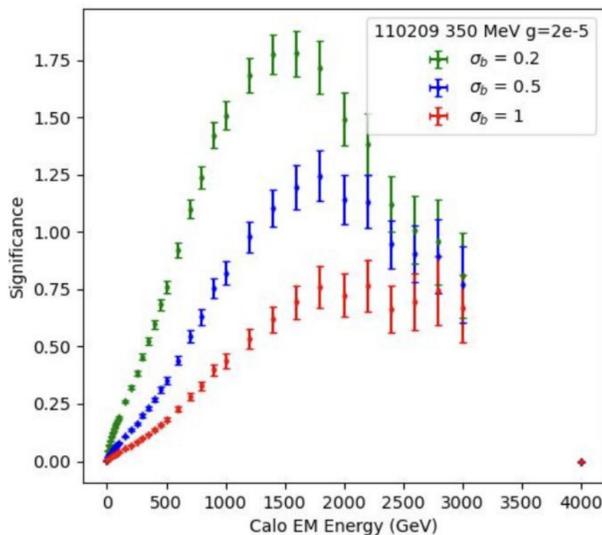
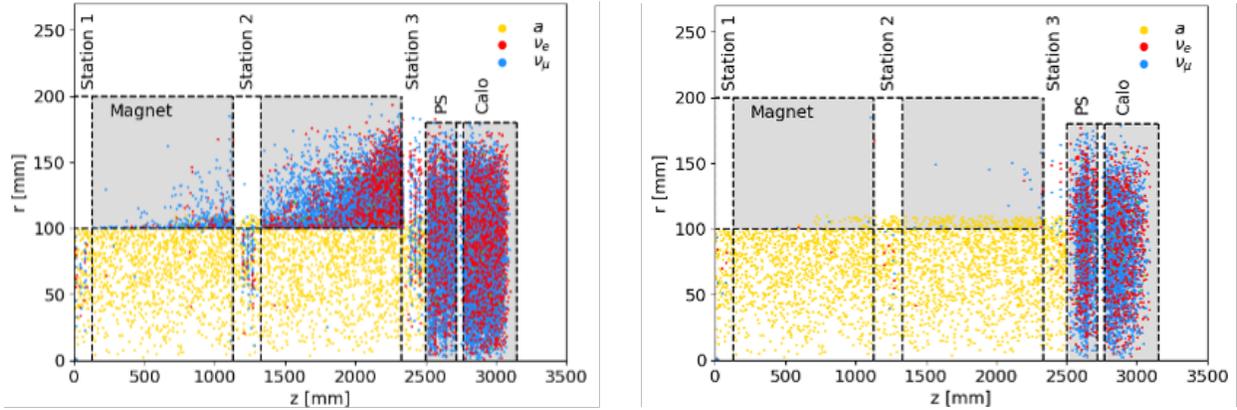


Figure 7.8: Significance studies on initial ALP-W signal sample. The significance of selections on the calorimeter EM energy (left) assuming 100% (red), 50% (blue) and 20% (green) background uncertainty. For two different ALP MC samples.

2364 uncertainty). This is shown for an ALP signal sample in Figure 7.8 for varying levels of background
 2365 uncertainty. These studies motivated the decision to place a strict requirement on the calorimeter
 2366 EM energy. Motivations for the preshower selections are discussed in the next section (see Chapter
 2367 7.3.1) where ALP signal MC is compared to neutrino background MC, defined in terms of where
 2368 in FASER the neutrino interactions take place.

2369 7.3 Background Estimation

2370 Multiple sources of background that can potentially contaminate the selected signal are described
 2371 in this section. The primary source of background in this analysis is due to neutrino produced
 2372 upstream of FASER and further neutrino interactions in the FASER volume. Also considered are
 2373 large-angle muons that could miss the FASER veto scintillators, the component of background that
 2374 may arise due to inefficiency of the veto scintillators themselves, and interactions of neutral hadrons.
 2375 Beam-related background and background from comsics rays are also taken into consideration.



(a)

(b)

Figure 7.9: Distributions in r - z of the neutrino interaction vertex (blue/red) and ALP decay vertex (yellow) within the FASER detector with (a) calorimeter energy above 100 GeV (b) calorimeter energy above 100 GeV and preshower ratio > 4.5 .

2376 7.3.1 Neutrino Background

2377 Neutrinos produced upstream of FASER will pass the charge cuts placed on the five veto scintil-
 2378 lators. In addition, interactions of the neutrinos [142] with detector material downstream of the
 2379 veto stations can produce charged and neutral particles that may leave significant energy deposits
 2380 in the calorimeter, with a signature that appears similar to that of the ALP signal. The lack
 2381 of material in the tracking stations means that most of the neutrino interactions are expected to
 2382 happen in the magnets, preshower and calorimeter, resulting in signatures which have little tracker
 2383 activity, similar to that expected for signal events, and so neutrinos are expected to be a significant
 2384 background for this analysis. The neutrino background prediction in this analysis is made using
 2385 MC, this is discussed in Chapter 5. To validate a purely MC approach, neutrino validation regions
 2386 are constructed; for these validation regions, a lower energy requirement of 100 GeV is applied, but
 2387 there is no upper energy limit placed on the region definitions. Signal contamination from ALPs is
 2388 below 30% in models not already in excluded parameter space.

2389 The most effective way to target this neutrino background is by categorising neutrinos according

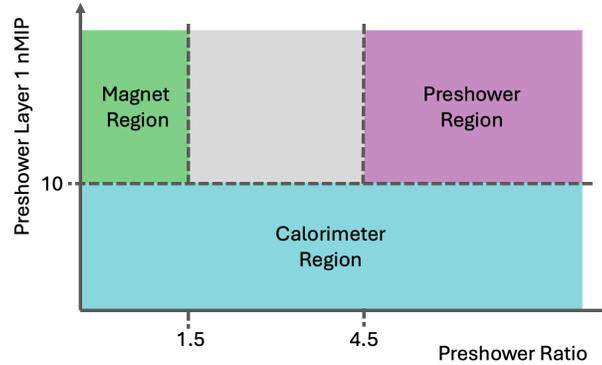


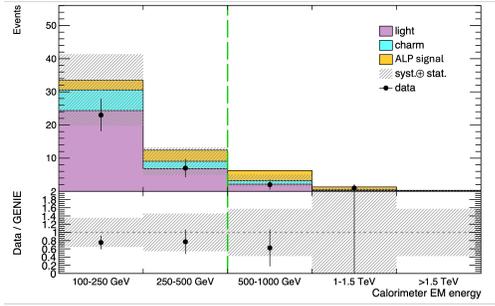
Figure 7.10: Plot showing the magnet region, calorimeter region and preshower region. The three different regions for targeting neutrino interactions, in the plane of the preshower layer 1 and preshower ratio cuts. The preshower region becomes the signal region for this analysis at high calorimeter energies.

2390 to where in FASER they interact, resulting in the “Magnet”, “Calorimeter” and “Preshower”
 2391 regions. The difference in location of these interactions can be seen in Figure 7.9. The definitions
 2392 of the three regions are given below.

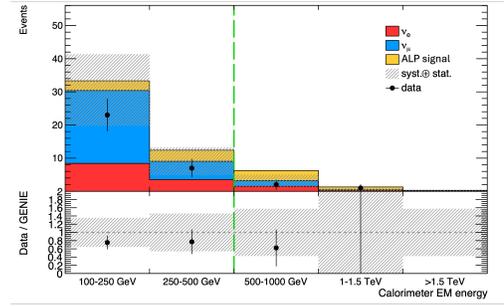
- 2393 • Magnet region: preshower layer 1 nMIP > 10, preshower ratio < 1.5
- 2394 • Preshower region: preshower layer 1 nMIP > 10, preshower ratio > 4.5
- 2395 • Calorimeter region: preshower layer 1 nMIP < 10

2396 The selections listed are in addition to the baseline selection, and also with Calo E > 100 GeV.
 2397 Initially, these regions were blinded above a calorimeter energy of 500 GeV, and eventually used
 2398 as validation regions up to the 1.5 TeV signal region energy selection. Figure 7.10 shows the
 2399 three different regions for targeting neutrino interactions, in the plane of the preshower layer 1 and
 2400 preshower ratio selections.

2401 Figure 7.11 and Figure 7.12 show the distribution of calorimeter energy in the magnet and
 2402 calorimeter regions, respectively, for the MC neutrino background compared to a representative
 2403 ALP signal. The neutrino background is split in terms of light and charm components, and in terms
 2404 of neutrino types. The **control** regions, particularly at lower calorimeter energy, are largely domi-
 2405 nated by neutrino background. **7.13 shows** the distribution of calorimeter energy in the preshower
 2406 region which, at high calorimeter energies, becomes the signal region. Here, the (representative)
 2407 ALP signal dominates the preshower region at higher energies.

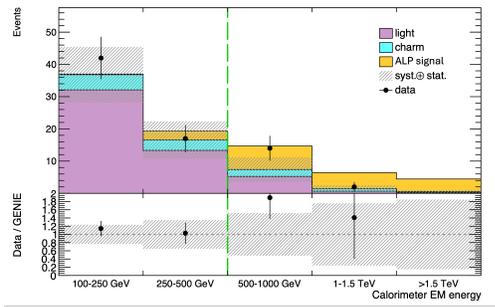


(a)

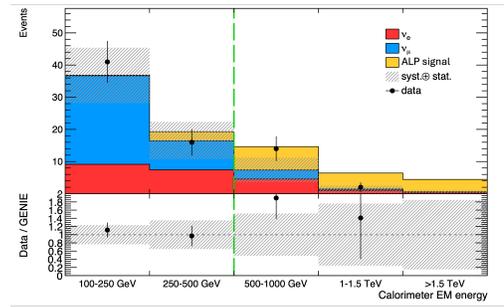


(b)

Figure 7.11: The calorimeter energy distribution for the MC neutrino background and a representative ALP signal in the magnet region. The ALP signal has mass 120 GeV and coupling $1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux. (a) shows the neutrino background in terms of light and charm components, (b) shows in terms of electron and muon neutrinos. The green dashed line indicates the region that was unblinded at the beginning of the unblinding procedure.

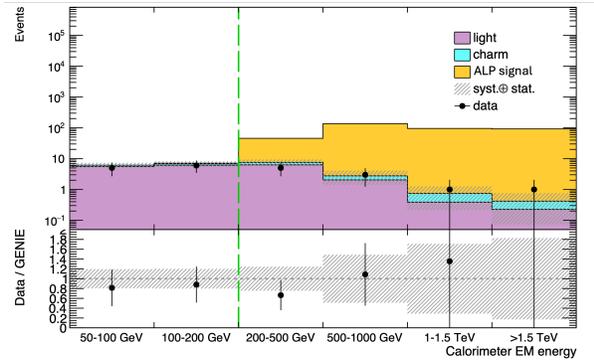


(a)

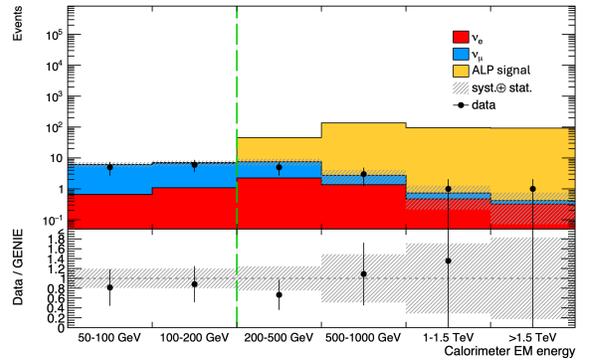


(b)

Figure 7.12: The calorimeter energy distribution for the MC neutrino background and a representative ALP signal in the calorimeter region. The ALP signal has mass 120 GeV and coupling $1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux. (a) shows the neutrino background in terms of light and charm components, (b) shows in terms of electron and muon neutrinos. The green dashed line indicates the region that was unblinded at the beginning of the unblinding procedure.

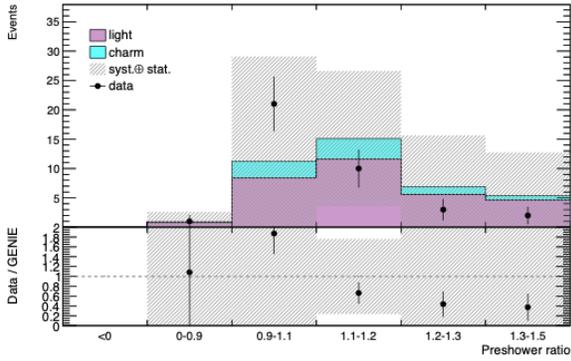


(a)

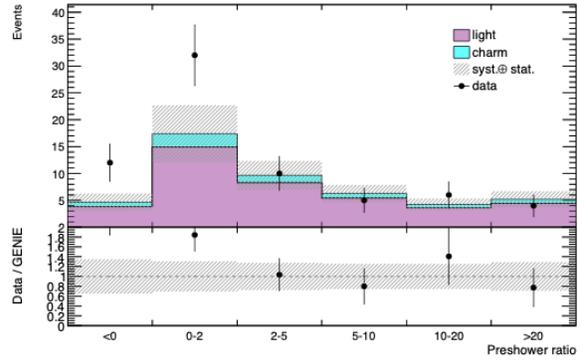


(b)

Figure 7.13: The calorimeter energy distribution for the MC neutrino background and a representative ALP signal in the preshower region. The ALP signal has mass 120 GeV and coupling $1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux. (a) shows the neutrino background in terms of light and charm components, (b) shows in terms of electron and muon neutrinos. The green dashed line indicates the region that was unblinded at the beginning of the unblinding procedure. The preshower region becomes the signal region for this analysis at high calorimeter energy.

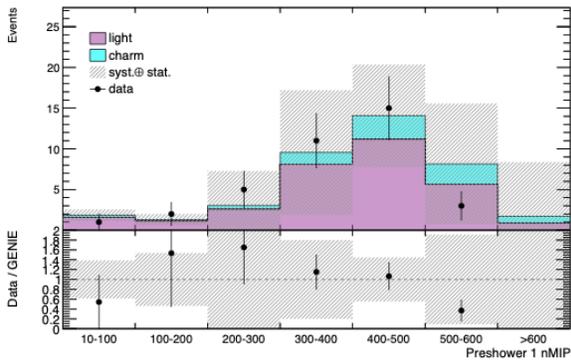


(a)

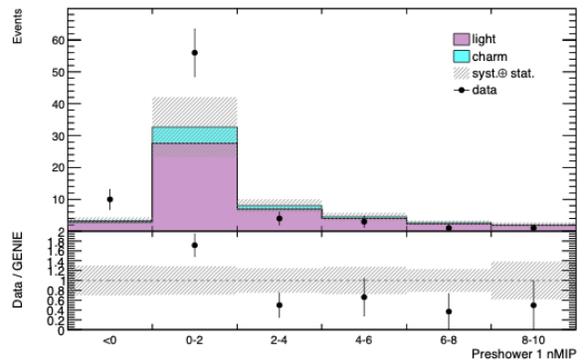


(b)

Figure 7.14: The preshower ratio distribution of the neutrino background MC in (a) the magnet region and (b) the calorimeter region. The neutrino background is shown in terms of light and charm components. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux.



(a)



(b)

Figure 7.15: The preshower layer 1 nMIP distribution of the neutrino background MC in (a) the magnet region and (b) the calorimeter region. The neutrino background is shown in terms of light and charm components. The uncertainty band includes MC statistical uncertainties and systematic uncertainties on the neutrino background flux.

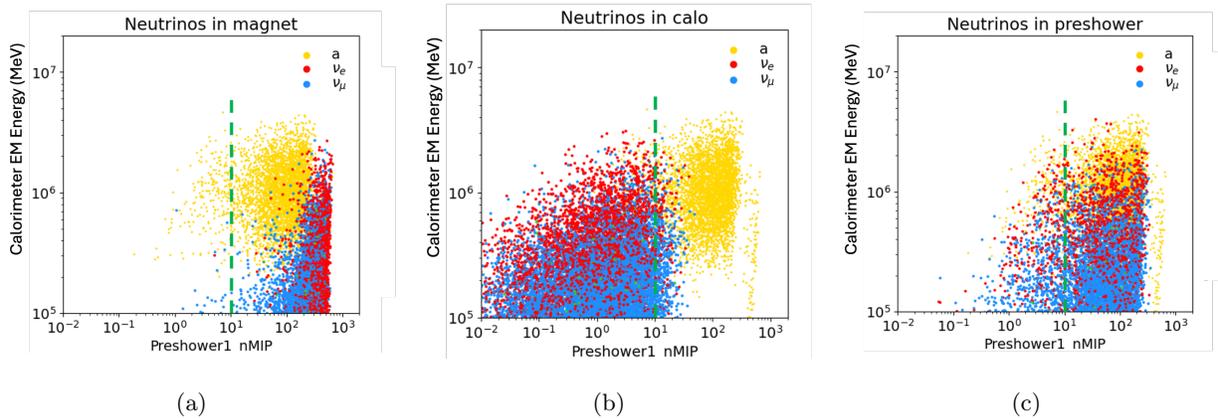


Figure 7.16: Number of MIPs in the second preshower layer against calorimeter energy for electron neutrinos (red) and muon neutrinos (blue) as well as a representative ALP signal (yellow). The neutrinos are categorised in terms of their interaction vertex: (a) neutrinos interacting in the magnet, (b) neutrinos interacting in the calorimeter, (c) neutrinos interacting in the preshower. The green dashed line shows the cut used in this analysis: preshower layer 1 > 10 MIPs.

2408 The magnet, calorimeter and preshower neutrinos can be effectively distinguished with require-
 2409 ments on number of MIPs in the second preshower layer and the preshower ratio. Neutrinos inter-
 2410 acting in the magnet have relatively large charges in the second preshower layer (PS1) as shown in
 2411 Figure 7.15a, and the PS ratio is centred around one as can be seen in Figure 7.14a. The different
 2412 distributions of the preshower variables depending on the region where the neutrinos interact is also
 2413 shown in Figure 7.16 and Figure 7.17. Neutrinos interacting in the calorimeter have low charges in
 2414 the second preshower layer, shown in Figure 7.15b, and a wide range of preshower ratio values since
 2415 most interactions are yet to take place, shown in Figure 7.14b. In contrast, neutrinos interacting
 2416 in the preshower look very signal-like, making it difficult to distinguish. Therefore, the majority of
 2417 neutrinos making up the background in this analysis come from interactions in the preshower.

2418 The power the preshower variable selections have in removing neutrino background from ALP
 2419 signal is highlighted in Figure 7.16 and Figure 7.17. Figure 7.16 shows that most of the charge
 2420 deposited by ALP signal (yellow) in the second preshower layer (PS 1) is above 10 MIPs. A selection
 2421 above 10 MIPs is particularly effective at removing neutrinos interacting in the calorimeter. Figure
 2422 7.17 shows that the ALP signal lies above a preshower ratio of 4.5. By contrast to the preshower
 2423 layer 1 selection, this preshower ratio selection above 4.5 mostly targets neutrinos interacting in
 2424 the magnet, shown in Figure 7.17.

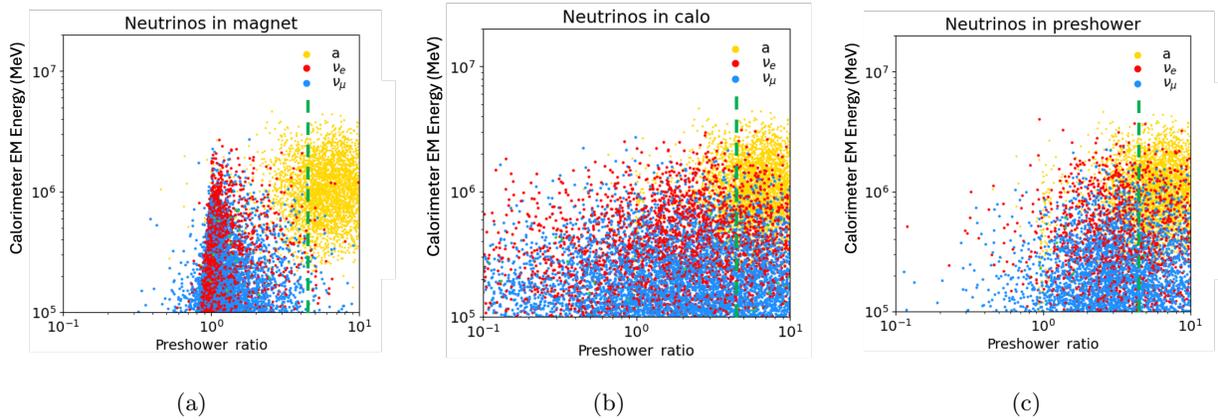


Figure 7.17: Preshower ratio against calorimeter energy for electron neutrinos (red) and muon neutrinos (blue) as well as a representative ALP signal (yellow). The neutrinos are categorised in terms of their interaction vertex: (a) neutrinos interacting in the magnet, (b) neutrinos interacting in the calorimeter, (c) neutrinos interacting in the preshower. The green dashed line shows the cut used in this analysis: preshower ratio > 4.5 .

2425 As stated, the neutrino background estimation is based purely on MC predictions. The MC
 2426 prediction was validated in these neutrino validation regions defined above; good agreement between
 2427 data and MC in the “calorimeter”, “magnet” and “preshower” neutrino validation regions was found
 2428 and this is shown in Table 7.5. The efficiency, defined as the percentage of true neutrinos of the
 2429 desired type found in a particular region, is greater than 80% and 90% in the magnet and calorimeter
 2430 regions, respectively. The purity of these regions, defined as a the percentage of “target” neutrinos
 2431 kept relative to all neutrinos populating that region, is greater than 90% in both regions. For the
 2432 preshower region, which is the region that become the signal region at high calorimeter energy, the
 2433 efficiency is 47% with a purity of 80%. Signal contamination is not taken into account in these
 2434 calculations of efficiency and purity; this plays a large role in the low efficiency seen in the preshower
 2435 region, where signal contamination becomes more significant at large calorimeter energies. These
 2436 numbers also do not take into account any additional contribution from background. However, due
 2437 to the calorimeter timing selection, there is no component from beam 1 background. There are two
 2438 cosmic muon events in the 100 GeV to 500 GeV validation region, but zero above this energy.

2439 ALP signal could decay in the magnet or calorimeter regions, producing signatures in the
 2440 detector that pass the selections defining the magnet and calorimeter validation regions. The
 2441 extent of signal contamination in the validation regions was checked using extended ALP MC signal

Table 7.5: Neutrino MC predictions in the calorimeter, magnet and preshower validation regions compared to data. Broken down in terms of neutrino flavour and with the uncertainties from flux variations, experimental uncertainties associated with the preshower and calorimeter cuts, and those derived from MC statistics, respectively.

Calorimeter region			
ν_e	$22.6 \pm 12.8 \pm 0.7 \pm 0.4$	Light	$51.6^{+2.0}_{-3.4} \pm 3.1 \pm 0.5$
ν_μ	$39.9 \pm 6.8 \pm 2.8 \pm 0.5$	Charm	$11.1^{+19.1}_{-5.1} \pm 0.4 \pm 0.3$
MC	62.7 ± 19.7 (31.4%)		
Data	74		
Magnet region			
ν_e	$13.8 \pm 10.3 \pm 1.4 \pm 0.3$	Light	$33.6^{+6.7}_{-3.4} \pm 4.3 \pm 0.4$
ν_μ	$29.4 \pm 8.0 \pm 3.8 \pm 0.4$	Charm	$9.9^{+16.1}_{-4.6} \pm 0.9 \pm 0.2$
MC	43.5 ± 18.2 (41.9%)		
Data	34		
Preshower region			
ν_e	$5.16 \pm 2.59 \pm 0.51 \pm 0.17$	Light	$14.8^{+0.9}_{-1.2} \pm 1.8 \pm 0.3$
ν_μ	$12.6 \pm 2.3 \pm 1.61 \pm 0.3$	Charm	$3.0^{+4.5}_{-1.4} \pm 0.3 \pm 0.1$
MC	17.8 ± 5.1 (28.8%)		
Data	15		

2442 samples with at larger radius and z position, so that interactions in the full fiducial volume, as well
2443 as to the end of the calorimeter, were taken into account. Signal contamination can be very large,
2444 particularly in the calorimeter region, however, further investigation into which models provide
2445 the largest contamination shows that these models are already well excluded. At the borders of
2446 FASER's expected reach with this analysis, the signal contamination remains consistent with the
2447 systematic uncertainties associated with the neutrino MC prediction.

2448 The number of neutrinos expected in 57.7 fb^{-1} is 0.44 ± 0.38 events. This is shown in Ta-
2449 ble 7.6 and broken down in terms of ν_e and ν_μ as well as light and charm components, with the
2450 uncertainty arising from generator flux, experimental uncertainties associated with the MC mod-
2451 elling of preshower and calorimeter cuts, and the uncertainty due to MC statistics. All sources of
2452 uncertainty are discussed later in Section 7.4.

Table 7.6: Summary of the MC estimate for the neutrino background for 57.7 fb^{-1} in the signal region. Included are uncertainties from flux variations, experimental uncertainties associated with the preshower and calorimeter, and those derived from MC statistics, respectively.

Signal Region			
ν_e	$0.34 \pm 0.33 \pm 0.11 \pm 0.05$	Light	$0.23_{-0.11}^{+0.01} \pm 0.11 \pm 0.04$
ν_μ	$0.10 \pm 0.05 \pm 0.05 \pm 0.02$	Charm	$0.20_{-0.09}^{+0.34} \pm 0.06 \pm 0.03$
MC	0.44 ± 0.39 (88.6%)		

2453 7.3.2 Neutral Hadrons

2454 Neutral hadrons could be seen in this analysis if they are generated from muon interactions in the
 2455 material in front of FASER, and therefore pass through the veto scintillator system undetected. It
 2456 is possible, through interaction and decay within the magnets and infrastructure of FASER, that
 2457 such particles could leave significant deposits in the preshower and calorimeter, and therefore be a
 2458 potential background for an ALP search.

2459 The FLUKA muon MC sample described in Chapter 5.3.2 is used to evaluate this background.

2460 The neutral hadrons, and the corresponding PID that are targeted in this study are:

- 2461 • K_L - PID = 130
- 2462 • K_S - PID = 310
- 2463 • Neutrons (and anti-neutrons) - PID = 2112
- 2464 • Λ_0 (and anti- Λ_0) - PID = 3122

2465 It is possible that these neutral hadrons decay to final states with a signal-like topology, by
 2466 examining the truth information available in the physics ntuples created for this analysis, it was
 2467 found that none of these events survived calorimeter energy cuts above 200 GeV which is far below
 2468 the signal region. This confirms that neutral hadrons are negligible in this analysis.

2469 7.3.3 Inefficiency of the Veto Scintillators

2470 As shown in Chapter 6.3.3, the expected background of muons crossing FASER without being
 2471 vetoed by any of the scintillator stations is below 10^{-18} , due to the very high efficiency of each veto
 2472 layer. Therefore, this component of background is considered to be negligible.

Table 7.7: MC cutflow for FLUKA muon sample.

FLUKA Muon MC		
Selection	Input	Pass
Calo trigger	5245973878	155049
VetoNu Signal < 40 pC	155049	111
Veto Signal < 40 pC	111	0
Timing Signal < 20 pC	0	0

Table 7.8: MC cutflow specifically for studying ALP large-angle muon background.

Large-angle Muon MC		
Selection	Input	Pass
Calo trigger	400000	431
VetoNu Signal < 40 pC	431	4
Veto Signal < 40 pC	4	2
Timing Signal < 20 pC	2	0

2473 7.3.4 Large-angle Muons

2474 A potential background that must be considered in this analysis arises due to large-angle muons
 2475 that enter FASER at such an angle that they miss the veto scintillators but potentially leave a
 2476 large enough energy deposit in the calorimeter to be mistaken for signal. Two MC samples are
 2477 used in this analysis to investigate this background component and are defined in Section 5.3.2.
 2478 The resulting cutflow for the FLUKA MC sample is shown in Table 7.7, scaled to 57.7 fb^{-1} . Zero
 2479 muon events pass the veto cuts in the ALPs baseline selection, additionally, a second MC sample,
 2480 designed to specifically generate this type of muons was tested and shows zero events passing the
 2481 selection. This is summarised in Table 7.8.

2482 **Whilst providing a known underestimate**, these MC samples give confidence in a negligible
 2483 component of large-angle muons. Additional methods are applied in order to validate and confirm
 2484 that this background is negligible.

2485 7.3.4.1 The ABCD Method

2486 Various data-driven ABCD methods are explored, with the aim of trying to capture and target this
 2487 large-angle muon component, should it be present in the dataset, in order to place a conservative

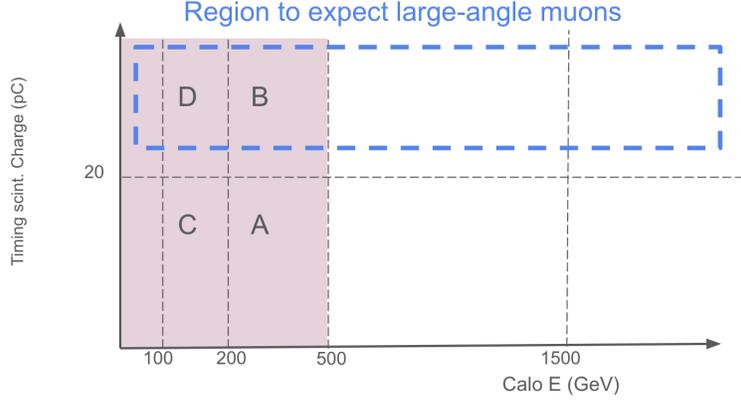


Figure 7.18: The first ABCD configuration considered to target large-angle muons. Using an inversion of the timing scintillator charge selection used in this analysis, and the calorimeter energy. The unblinded regions are indicated in pink. The regions where the timing charge requirement is inverted are indicated by the dashed blue lines to show where large-angle muons would be expected to populate data.

2488 upper limit on this background. The definition of an ABCD method is given in Chapter 6.3.4 in
 2489 the context of a validation method for the dark photon analysis background estimate. Here the
 2490 basic idea is similar, with the aim to take two uncorrelated variables: energy in the calorimeter,
 2491 and charge deposited in scintillators, to construct an ABCD validation of the signal region such
 2492 that a prediction can be calculated:

$$A(\text{pred.}) = B \times \frac{C}{D}. \quad (7.2)$$

2493 A number of differently constructed ABCD regions are investigated in the plane of calorimeter
 2494 energy and either timing scintillator charge or veto scintillator charge. Investigations were carried
 2495 out with various combinations of baseline selections in order to find the best method for targeting
 2496 this type of background, whilst also minimising the necessary extrapolation to the signal region.

2497 7.3.4.2 Constructing regions based on the timing scintillator

2498 The first ABCD configuration to be tested is based on the assumption that these muons could
 2499 plausibly deposit significant charge in the **timing scintillator** and go on to leave deposits in the
 2500 calorimeter. Modelling this background and using an ABCD method to extrapolate to the signal
 2501 region, should give a clear idea of size of this background.

Table 7.9: The events in ABCD regions defined above, after baseline cuts. The central MC neutrino estimate in the different regions is subtracted from data events to give a picture of the component of large-angle muons captured by this method. In bold is the negative large-angle muon estimate which proves this method unsuitable for targeting this background.

Events in ABCD Region			
Region	Data	Neutrino MC	Large-angle Muon
A	43.0 ± 6.6	54.0 ± 18.3	-11.0 ± 19.5
B	5.0 ± 2.2	3.7 ± 1.5	1.1 ± 2.7
C	71.0 ± 8.4	70.8 ± 17.3	$0.19. \pm 19.3$
D	11.0 ± 3.3	8.2 ± 2.8	2.8 ± 4.37

Table 7.10: The events in ABCD regions defined above, after baseline cuts and the preshower cuts used in this analysis (PS ratio > 4.5 , PS1 nMIP > 10). The central MC neutrino estimate in the different regions is subtracted from data events to give a picture of the component of large-angle muons captured by this method. In bold is the negative large-angle muon estimates which proves this method unsuitable for targeting this background.

Events in ABCD Region + Preshower Selections			
Region	Data	Neutrino MC	Large-angle Muon
A	5.0 ± 2.2	7.5 ± 1.8	-2.5 ± 2.9
B	1.0 ± 1.0	0.12 ± 0.08	0.88 ± 1.0
C	6.0 ± 2.5	6.8 ± 1.4	-0.81 ± 2.80
D	0.0 ± 0.0	0.19 ± 0.07	-0.19 ± 0.08

2502 The four regions are constructed in terms of calorimeter energy and the inversion of the timing
 2503 scintillator charge requirement used in the analysis, Figure 7.18 shows the ABCD regions. The
 2504 baseline selection is applied and the region definitions are:

- 2505 • Region A - Calorimeter energy 200 GeV – 500 GeV, Timing scintillator charge < 20 pC.
- 2506 • Region B - Calorimeter energy 200 GeV – 500 GeV, Timing scintillator charge > 20 pC.
- 2507 • Region C - Calorimeter energy 100 GeV – 200 GeV, Timing scintillator charge < 20 pC.
- 2508 • Region D - Calorimeter energy 100 GeV – 200 GeV, Timing scintillator charge > 20 pC.

2509 With this logic, control regions D and B would be populated by large-angle muons and, using C
 2510 as shown in Equation 7.2, would provide an estimate of the component of this background present
 2511 in the signal region, A, once scaling had been applied to extrapolate to higher calorimeter energy.

2512 Issues arise with this configuration because once the neutrino estimate in these regions is taken
2513 into account, the remaining component argued to be large-angle muons is negative. Therefore,
2514 no meaningful scaling can be applied to extrapolate to the signal region. The population of these
2515 regions, in terms of data and neutrino MC prediction, and the resulting large-angle muon component
2516 is shown in Table 7.9.

2517 This problem becomes even more apparent when the requirements on the preshower variables
2518 used in this analysis are applied (PS ratio > 4.5 , PS1 nMIP > 10), this is shown in Table 7.10.
2519 The negative large-angle muon estimate, and the lack of statistics particularly in region D, proves
2520 that this method, in the current configuration, is unsuitable for targeting this type of background.

2521 **7.3.4.3 Constructing regions based on the veto scintillator**

2522 In each of the ABCD configurations using the timing scintillator charge and calorimeter energy, it
2523 was found that the regions were dominated by neutrino background. It is, therefore, impossible to
2524 use this method to place an upper limit on the number of large-angle muons expected in the signal
2525 region, the reason being that there are so little of such events to capture. Therefore, in order to
2526 validate that the large-angle muon component of background in this analysis is negligible, a final
2527 **ABCD method is constructed using the veto scintillator charge cuts and calorimeter energy.**

2528 This ABCD method is used to estimate the large-angle muon background in two separate
2529 control regions. Both require charge deposits in the timing scintillator of greater than 20 pC but
2530 less than 40 pC in the veto scintillators. The first control region requires a preshower ratio less than
2531 4.5, whereas the second control region requires a preshower ratio greater than 4.5 and a charge in
2532 the second preshower layer of greater than the 10 MIP equivalent. The construction of the first
2533 control region, with the requirement of PS ratio < 4.5 should target large-angle muons, which are
2534 unlikely to have a large preshower ratio. The second control region has the same selection as the
2535 preshower/signal region, but with the charge requirement in the timing scintillator inverted.

2536 To summarise, the following combination of preshower requirements are applied to the two
2537 ABCD configurations:

- 2538 • Configuration 1:

2539 – PS Ratio > 4.5

2540

- Configuration 2:

2541

- PS Ratio > 4.5

2542

- PS1 nMIP > 10

2543

The four ABCD regions in each of the two configurations are defined in terms of calorimeter energy and the inversion of the veto scintillator charge requirement used in this analysis. The regions are visualised in Figure 7.19. In addition to the above preshower selections, the baseline selection is applied and all of the ABCD regions require a timing scintillator charge > 20 pC, this is the opposite of the selection used in the signal region. The ABCD region definitions are:

2544

2545

2546

2547

2548

- Region A - Calorimeter energy > 1.5 TeV, Veto scintillator charge < 40 pC.

2549

- Region B - Calorimeter energy > 1.5 TeV, Veto scintillator charge > 40 pC.

2550

- Region C - Calorimeter energy 100 GeV – 200/500 GeV, Veto scintillator charge < 40 pC.

2551

- Region D - Calorimeter energy 100 GeV – 200/500 GeV, Veto scintillator charge > 40 pC.

2552

This ABCD method was investigated after the initial unblinding of this analysis, leading to some differences in blinding compared to the previous method described above. The two values considered for the upper limit on calorimeter energy in regions C and D depends on which control region is considered. The higher threshold is used for the second configuration, to provide sufficient statistics for this method.

2553

2554

2555

2556

2557

The estimate in region A is shown in Table 7.11, as with the previous method, the component of neutrino background (inclusive of uncertainties) is subtracted from the data. The final prediction in the two configurations, inclusive of tracking systematics and uncertainties associated with studying the muon events, is shown in Table 7.12.

2561

The neutrino background in the signal region is estimated to be 0.44 ± 0.39 , taking the more conservative upper limit of $(19.1 \pm 27.3) \times 10^{-3}$ is an order of magnitude below this estimate. The estimate derived from the second configuration, $(4.1 \pm 6.1) \times 10^{-3}$, requires the least scaling to the signal region since both preshower requirements are applied. For example, the timing scintillator charge requirement would have to be inverted, which is very likely to suppress this estimate further.

2562

2563

2564

2565

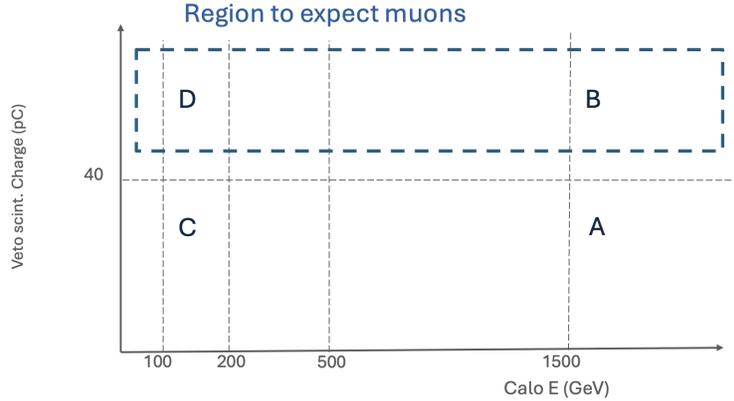


Figure 7.19: ABCD configuration of the two configurations considered to target muons. Using an inversion of the veto scintillator charge cut used in this analysis, and the calorimeter energy as the ABCD variables. The regions where the veto charge requirement is inverted are highlighted in blue to show where forward-going muons are expected to populate data.

Table 7.11: Data and neutrino yields in the different ABCD regions and the prediction for the large-angle muon estimate for the two preshower selections. To calculate the prediction in region A, the expected MC neutrino background is first subtracted from the data in region C. The uncertainty on the neutrino MC includes flux and experimental sources and is propagated to the final estimate.

Preshower selection	A	B	C	C (ν MC)	D	A (pred.) $\times 10^{-3}$
PS ratio < 4.5 (Configuration 1)	0	1211	11	7.9 ± 2.9	199506	19.1 ± 20.1 (stat.) ± 17.7 (ν syst.)
PS ratio > 4.5, PS 1 nMIP > 10 (Configuration 2)	0	143	1	0.3 ± 0.2	24130	4.1 ± 5.9 (stat.) ± 1.0 (ν syst.)

Table 7.12: Final estimates of the large-angle muon background in the two configurations.

Preshower selection	A (pred.) $\times 10^{-3}$
PS ratio < 4.5 (Configuration 1)	19.1 ± 20.1 (stat.) ± 17.7 (ν syst.) ± 5.2 (track syst.) = 19.1 ± 27.3 (143%)
PS ratio > 4.5, PS 1 nMIP > 10 (Configuration 2)	4.1 ± 5.9 (stat.) ± 1.0 (ν syst.) ± 1.1 (track syst.) = 4.1 ± 6.1 (148%)

Table 7.13: Cutflow of events passing selections for the evaluation of cosmic ray background.

Selection	Events	Efficiency[%]
Total Events	98510	-
Calo Trigger and Colliding BCID	1478	1.50
VetoNu Signal < 40 pC	1478	100
Veto Signal < 40 pC	1478	100
Timing Signal < 20 pC	1478	100
PS Ratio > 4.5	161	10.89
PS1 nMIP > 10	9	5.59
Calo E > 500 GeV	0	0

2566 The large-angle muon estimate is several orders of magnitude below the neutrino estimate, as a
 2567 result, the large-angle muon background can be considered negligible in this analysis.

2568 7.3.5 Non-collision Backgrounds

2569 As with the dark photon analysis, it is necessary to consider the component of background that
 2570 arises due nearby LHC beam interactions and the interactions of cosmic ray muons. The following
 2571 sections demonstrate that all non-collision background is negligible in this analysis.

2572 7.3.5.1 Background due to cosmic ray muons

2573 In order to evaluate the number of cosmic events that could be included in this dataset, data
 2574 recorded during periods without beam in the LHC is analysed. The total time period of recon-
 2575 structed data collected in this setup is approximately equivalent to the timeframe in which the
 2576 physics dataset used in this analysis was collected.

2577 The number of events passing each requirement are shown in Table 7.13. Requiring that the
 2578 events trigger in the calorimeter and also belong to a colliding BCID over 98% of this “cosmics”
 2579 dataset. The remaining events are completely removed with a relatively low calorimeter energy
 2580 selection that is far away from the eventual calorimeter energy chosen for the signal region. It is
 2581 therefore very clear that this component will be negligible.

Selection	Events	Rel. Acceptance [%]
Calo Trigger and B1 BCID	54594	-
VetoNu Signal < 40 pC	54524	99.8
Veto Signal < 40 pC	54359	99.7
Timing Signal < 20 pC	53684	98.8
PS Ratio > 4.5	6452	12.0
PS1 nMIP > 10	95	1.47
Calorimeter Timing	0	0

Table 7.14: Summary of events passing selections and calorimeter timing requirement for the evaluation of beam 1 background.

2582 7.3.5.2 Beam 1 Background

2583 Contributions from beam 1 background come from colliding bunch BCIDs that also correspond
2584 with BCID timings of beam 1 passing FASER. This is the result of secondary particles produced
2585 when beam 1, passing FASER towards the ATLAS IP, interacts with the LHC Q12 magnet located
2586 close to FASER. Unlike cosmic ray muons and general beam background, which display random
2587 signal timing, the beam 1 background has a well-defined signal time-of-arrival of roughly -12.5 ns
2588 in relation to a collision signal. Timing can be used as an additional and effective handle to reduce
2589 beam 1 background.

2590 As with the dark photon analysis, data to evaluate this background is collected by taking events
2591 with BCIDs corresponding to collisions in LHC B1 passing FASER, but which do not correspond
2592 to colliding bunches at IP1. Although some of these events do pass the scintillator requirements in
2593 the baseline selection, the beam 1 background is suppressed to a negligible level once calorimeter
2594 timing requirements are applied. Such beam 1 events would arrive 127 bunch-crossings before
2595 collisions from when the same bunch would be seen in the detector. Figure 7.20 illustrates the
2596 clear distinction that can be made between collision events and beam 1 background. The cutflow
2597 in Table 7.14 [show](#) how the calorimeter timing removes all of this background.

2598 7.3.6 Summary of Total Expected Background

2599 A summary of the total background estimate in this analysis is shown in Table 7.15. Components
2600 from neutral hadrons, large-angle muons, inefficiencies from the veto scintillators, and non-collision

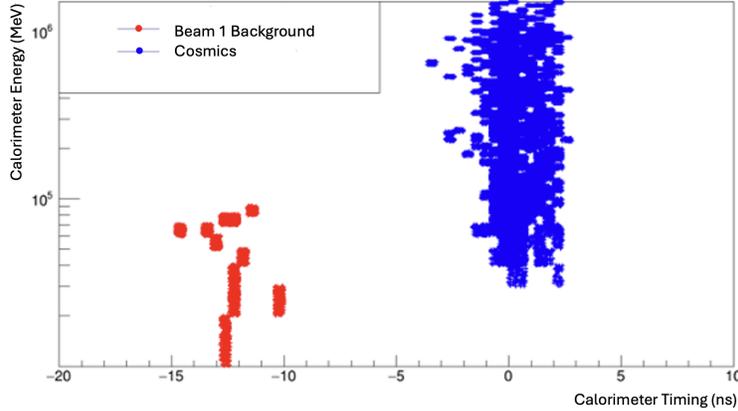


Figure 7.20: Timing in the calorimeter of beam 1 background events (red) and collision events (red). A cut at -5 ns removes all components of beam 1 background.

Table 7.15: Summary of the different sources of background considered in this analysis and the total estimate, with uncertainty.

Source	Background	Uncertainty
Neutrino	0.44	0.39 (88.6%)
Neutral Hadrons	-	-
Veto Inefficiency	-	-
Large-angle Muons	-	-
Non-collision Backgrounds	-	-
Total	0.44	0.39 (88.6%)

2601 backgrounds are considered to be negligible. Therefore, the background estimate in the signal
 2602 region is due to interactions from neutrinos. The total background estimate is 0.44 ± 0.39 events.

2603 7.4 Systematic Uncertainties

2604 This section describes the various sources of systematic uncertainties that are relevant to signal and
 2605 background. This is a cut-and-count analysis, therefore, the systematic uncertainties are related to
 2606 the signal yield, rather than shape uncertainty. These systematic uncertainties are implemented as
 2607 nuisance parameters in the model-dependent fit performed in the statistical interpretation of the
 2608 results of this analysis. This is explained in Chapter 5.4.1. The main sources of uncertainty can be
 2609 categorised into theory uncertainties and experimental uncertainties. The theory uncertainty is the
 2610 systematic uncertainty associated with the MC generators used to simulate signal and background
 2611 processes. The experimental uncertainties are the systematic uncertainties associated with the

2612 preshower and calorimeter variables used in this analysis and the uncertainty of the measurement
2613 of the luminosity that comes from ATLAS. There is also a statistical uncertainty derived from MC
2614 statistics, calculated from the standard deviation of the sum of the weights of each MC sample.

2615 **7.4.1 Theory Systematic Uncertainties**

2616 Systematic uncertainties that arise due to the modelling of the MC generators used to simulate the
2617 signal and background samples used in this analysis. The flux uncertainties due to the different
2618 generators used in the MC is the dominant systematic uncertainty, for both signal and background.

2619 **7.4.1.1 Signal Systematic Uncertainties**

2620 As discussed in Chapter 5, the type of generators used for the ALP signal can be separated into
2621 light and charm hadron components. The uncertainty on the light hadron component comes from
2622 the spread of the generator predictions provided by SIBYLL, QGSJET and Pythia (forward).
2623 The uncertainty associated with the charm hadron component comes from the POWHEG+Pythia
2624 minimum and maximum predictions which use central factorisation and resummation scales defined
2625 in Ref. [129].

2626 The net shift in the yield, either up or down, was taken for each generator and added in
2627 quadrature, along with an additional 20% uncertainty recommended for the modelling of the B
2628 hadron component, in order to obtain a total uncertainty up and down. This is shown as a
2629 percentage of the total yield in Table 7.16. The uncertainty on the signal is by far the dominant
2630 systematic uncertainty involved in this analysis, equal to between 30 and 60% uncertainty.

2631 **7.4.1.2 Background Systematic Uncertainties**

2632 As detailed in Chapter 5, the component of neutrino flux coming from light hadrons is based on the
2633 EPOS-LHC generator and the charm hadron component uses the POWHEG+Pythia prediction.
2634 The theory systematic uncertainty associated with the neutrino background comes from the spread
2635 of the flux predictions from the different MC generators used. Particularly, there is a large un-
2636 certainty due to the modeling of the charm hadron component. A breakdown of the uncertainties
2637 associated with the neutrino background in terms of: theory uncertainty due to the spread of the

Table 7.16: The percentage change in yield up and down due to systematic uncertainty on generator type. Uncertainty from each generator are added in quadrature, including the additional 20% uncertainty arising from modeling of B hadrons in the ALP-W model.

ALP Signal	Generator unc shift up	Generator unc shift down
$m_a = 80 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-3} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	63.3%	34.5%
$m_a = 60 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 1.1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	57.9%	33.3%
$m_a = 120 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 3 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	59.9%	33.7%
$m_a = 100 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	57.4%	33.2%
$m_a = 140 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 2 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	59.4%	33.6%
$m_a = 140 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	56.6%	32.9%
$m_a = 200 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	59.7%	33.7%
$m_a = 200 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	57.7%	33.2%
$m_a = 230 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	58.8%	33.5%
$m_a = 230 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	57.4%	33.1%

2638 generator predictions, experimental uncertainty due to the preshower and calorimeter selections,
2639 and the uncertainty due to MC statistics is shown in Table 7.6.

2640 **7.4.2 Experimental Systematic Uncertainties**

2641 This section deals with the experimental uncertainties: the systematic uncertainties related to the
2642 scintillator, preshower and calorimeter selections used in this analysis, in addition to the 2.2% (2022
2643 data) and 2.04% (2023 data) uncertainty on the luminosity measurement from ATLAS.

2644 **7.4.2.1 Scintillator Systematic Uncertainty**

2645 The approach to the systematic uncertainty on the veto scintillator selections in this analysis is
2646 based on the treatment of this uncertainty in the A' analysis, detailed in Chapter 6.4.2.1. The same
2647 40 pC cut in both the VetoNu scintillator and the veto scintillator stations is used in the selection.
2648 Given that the veto scintillators are very efficient, the uncertainty on the signal yield is considered
2649 to be negligible.

2650 The systematic uncertainty associated with the timing scintillator in this analysis is driven by
2651 the low threshold. Any signal greater than 20 pC in either the top or bottom timing scintillators is
2652 rejected. When data (2022 and 2023) are compared to a representative MC ALP-W signal sample,
2653 the difference between data and signal is clear. This was shown in Figure ???. The need to place a
2654 large uncertainty on this threshold is not necessary.

2655 **7.4.2.2 Preshower Systematic Uncertainty**

2656 The systematic uncertainty related to the two preshower variables used in this analysis is evaluated
2657 by looking at the discrepancy between data and MC for the charge distributions in the preshower
2658 scintillator layers using both test beam (TB) and TI12 data.

2659 The difference between MC and photon conversion events in TI12 data, shown in Figure 7.21a, is
2660 used to derive a correction factor. The difference in test beam data and MC, shown in Figure 7.21b,
2661 is also taken into account to determine the uncertainty, as the test beam uses FASER geometry
2662 and material description that matches that used in the ALP signal MC.

2663 A correction factor is applied in MC to the value of the preshower layer 1 nMIP (PS1 nMIP) of
2664 1.20, with a 20% uncertainty applied to the variable. A correction factor of 1.13 is applied to the

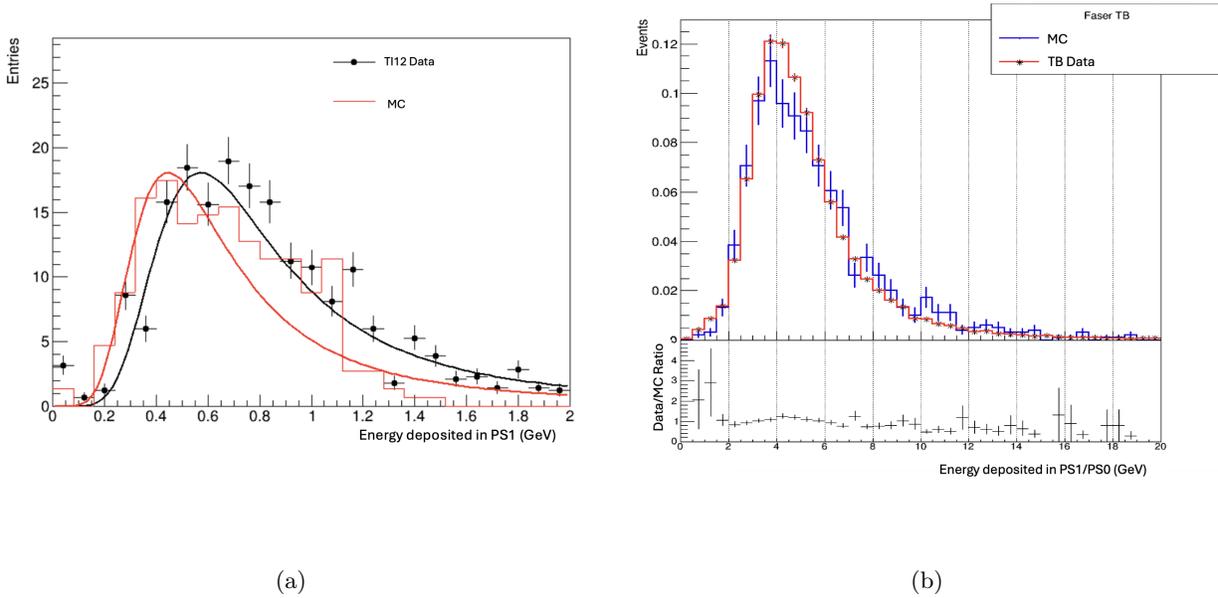


Figure 7.21: (a) Photon conversion in TI12 data and MC. A correction factor for the preshower variables is derived based on the difference between the two. (b) The difference in test beam data and 100 GeV electron MC in the geometry description matching that used to generate the ALP signal, used to estimate the uncertainty assigned to the preshower variables.

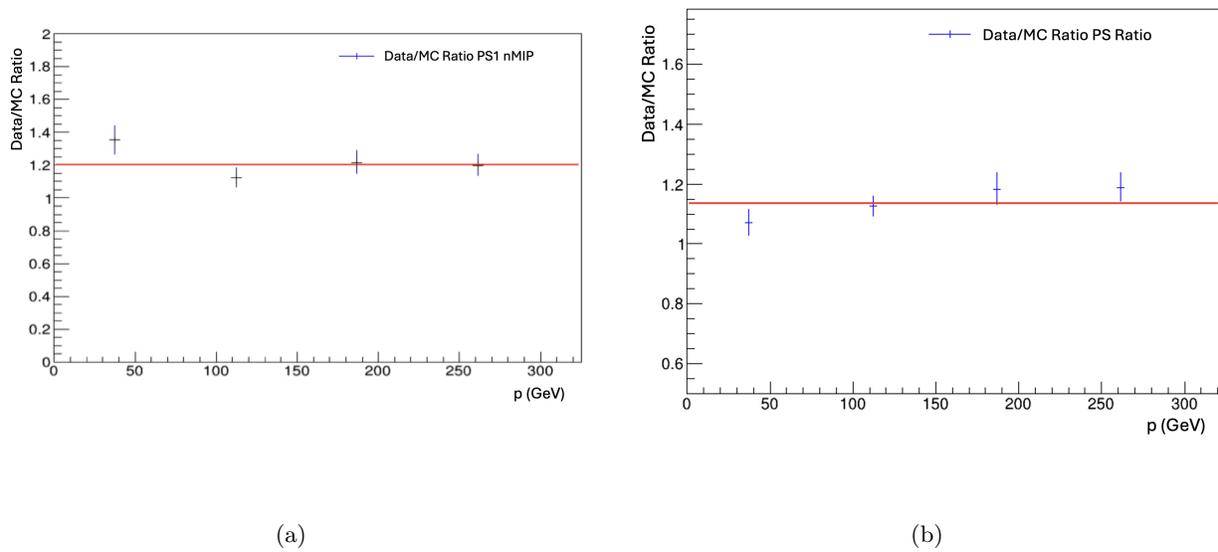


Figure 7.22: The agreement between data and MC measured as a function of momentum in studies of photon conversion events, resulting in correction factors for the preshower variables to be applied in MC for (a) PS1 nMIP (1.20) and (b) PS Ratio (1.13).

Table 7.17: The percentage change in yield up and down due to systematic uncertainty on PS1 nMIP. A correction factor of 1.20 is applied, with an uncertainty of 20%.

ALP Signal	PS1 nMIP unc. up	PS1 nMIP unc. down
$m_a = 80 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-3} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	0.299%	0.454%
$m_a = 60 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 1.1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	0.00%	0.00%
$m_a = 120 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 3 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	0.432%	0.598%
$m_a = 100 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	0.00%	0.00%
$m_a = 140 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 2 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	0.257%	0.578%
$m_a = 140 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	0.00%	0.270%
$m_a = 200 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	0.695%	0.477%
$m_a = 200 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	1.27%	0.921%
$m_a = 230 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	0.721%	0.954%
$m_a = 230 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	0.852%	0.461%

2665 MC preshower ratio (PS Ratio), with an uncertainty of 13%. Derivation of this correction factor
 2666 comes from the fits shown in Figure 7.22, where the agreement between data and MC is measured
 2667 for as a function of momentum. The percentage shifts in the yield are shown in Table 7.17 and
 2668 Table 7.18, respectively. These uncertainties, particularly those associated with the PS1 nMIP
 2669 variable, have a small overall impact on the signal.

2670 7.4.2.3 Calorimeter Systematics

2671 The energy calibration of the calorimeter and the uncertainty in comparing the calibrated energies
 2672 in data and MC at 500 GeV, is measured to be 6%, the various sources of uncertainty that contribute
 2673 to this 6% are shown in Table A.1 in Appendix A.2. The percentage change in the signal yield as a
 2674 result of this uncertainty is shown in Table 7.19. In addition, an 8.8% correction factor is applied

Table 7.18: The percentage change in yield up and down due to systematic uncertainty on the PS Ratio (preshower1/preshower0). A correction factor of 1.13 was applied, with an uncertainty of 13%.

ALP Signal	PS Ratio unc. up	PS Ratio unc. down
$m_a = 80 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-3} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	7.0%	7.6%
$m_a = 60 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 1.1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	4.2%	5.3%
$m_a = 120 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 3 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	6.5%	8.8%
$m_a = 100 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	4.9%	4.5%
$m_a = 140 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 2 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	6.0%	7.9%
$m_a = 140 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	6.4%	8.3%
$m_a = 200 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	6.4%	8.1%
$m_a = 200 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	5.1%	7.7%
$m_a = 230 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	6.2%	7.7%
$m_a = 230 \text{ MeV}$ $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$	5.6%	7.9%

2675 to the calorimeter EM energy. This is derived from test beam studies which used a calibrated MC
2676 energy to compare to test beam data, discussed in Chapter 8.1.2.

2677 The calorimeter EM energy threshold used in the ALP analysis (1.5 TeV) is considerably higher
2678 than the threshold used in the dark photon analysis (500 GeV). In order to study the effect of a
2679 much higher calorimeter energy threshold, and whether a 6% uncertainty is still suitable, a 10%
2680 and 20% uncertainty is also studied. The percentage change in the signal yield when applying these
2681 larger uncertainties to the calorimeter energy are shown in Table 7.20. The increased uncertainty
2682 and resulting shift in the signal yield can be large for certain signal points, however, it is still
2683 sub-dominant to the uncertainty associated with the generator flux. Furthermore, a calorimeter
2684 systematic uncertainty of 20% implemented into the statistical framework has a negligible impact
2685 on overall sensitivity and reach. This study shows that the assumption of a 6% uncertainty on the
2686 calorimeter energy remains a conservative estimate suitable for this analysis.

2687 7.4.3 A Summary of Systematic Uncertainties

2688 Table 7.21 summarises the sources of uncertainty on the signal, and the effect on the yield. De-
2689 scriptions of the systematic uncertainties implemented in this analysis are given in Table 7.22. The
2690 largest uncertainty, in the case of both signal and background, is due to the different generators
2691 used in the production of the MC samples.

2692 7.5 Results

2693 Once the signal efficiency and background estimates with uncertainties were evaluated, data were
2694 unblinded and 1 data event was observed in the signal region. This is consistent with the total
2695 expected background of 0.44 background events expected in the signal region, with an uncertainty of
2696 88.6%. The 1 event has a calorimeter energy of 1.6 TeV, a charge deposit in preshower layer 1 equal
2697 to 146 MIPs, and a preshower ratio of 9.0. This is consistent with a signal-like electromagnetic
2698 shower, however it cannot be ruled out that this event is a background event due to neutrino
2699 interactions. In order to claim a discovery with a significance of 3σ , 5 events would need to be
2700 observed in the signal region.

2701 Figure 7.23 shows the unblinded results in terms of calorimeter energy in the preshower region

Table 7.19: The percentage change in yield for representative signal MC samples in the case of the 6% calorimeter energy systematic uncertainty implemented in this analysis.

ALP Signal	6% unc. up	6% unc. down
$m_a = 80$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-3}$ GeV $^{-1}$	0.0%	0.1%
$m_a = 60$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 1.1 \times 10^{-4}$ GeV $^{-1}$	19.0%	10.6%
$m_a = 120$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 3 \times 10^{-4}$ GeV $^{-1}$	1.6%	2.0%
$m_a = 100$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	24.3%	16.4%
$m_a = 140$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 2 \times 10^{-4}$ GeV $^{-1}$	2.7%	3.6%
$m_a = 140$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	19.6%	15.0%
$m_a = 200$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-4}$ GeV $^{-1}$	2.5%	3.1%
$m_a = 200$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	12.8%	12.1%
$m_a = 230$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	6.0%	6.5%
$m_a = 230$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	11.5%	12.2%

Table 7.20: An investigation into the percentage change in signal yield for representative signal MC samples with 10% and 20% calorimeter energy systematic uncertainty.

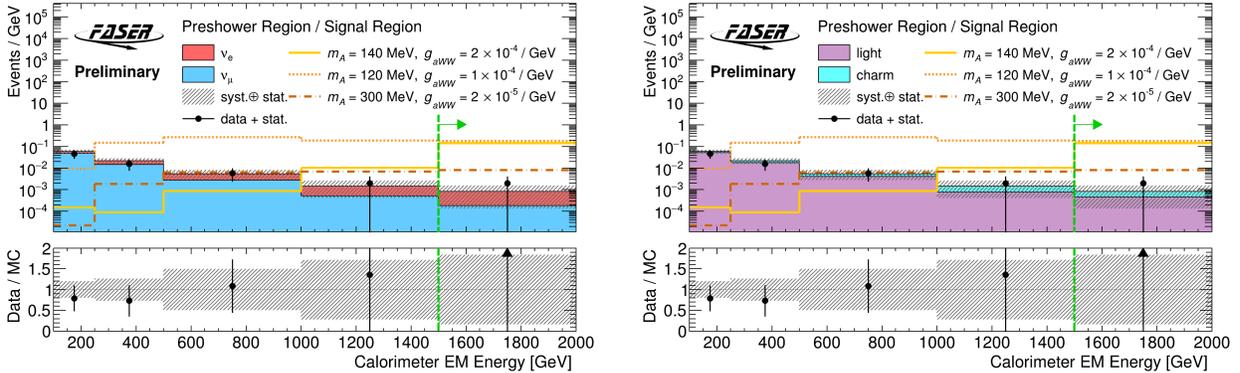
ALP Signal	10% unc. up	10% unc. down	20% unc. up	20% unc. down
$m_a = 80$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-3}$ GeV $^{-1}$	0.0%	0.1%	0.0%	0.483%
$m_a = 60$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 1.1 \times 10^{-4}$ GeV $^{-1}$	31.7%	19.0%	84.7%	40.2%
$m_a = 120$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 3 \times 10^{-4}$ GeV $^{-1}$	2.5%	3.7%	3.6%	9.108%
$m_a = 100$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	36.9%	25.0%	67.6%	44.3%
$m_a = 140$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 2 \times 10^{-4}$ GeV $^{-1}$	3.8%	5.6%	5.8%	13.2%
$m_a = 140$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	30.0%	23.9%	62.7%	43.4%
$m_a = 200$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 1 \times 10^{-4}$ GeV $^{-1}$	3.8%	5.5%	6.4%	11.4%
$m_a = 200$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	22.8%	18.1%	48.3%	34.5%
$m_a = 230$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 6 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	10.0%	11.0%	16.3%	22.4%
$m_a = 230$ MeV $g_{aWW} = 4 \times 10^{-5}$ GeV $^{-1}$	20.3%	19.3%	42.1%	35.3%

Table 7.21: Summary of the various sources of signal uncertainty, the effect of this uncertainty on the signal yield across the parameter space is shown. Numbers in parenthesis indicate the effect on signals in the new exclusion reach with this analysis. The error on the MC statistics is calculated using the standard deviation of the sum of the weights (W) of each sample.

Source	Value	Effect on signal yield
ALP Signal Generator	30-60%	30-60% (30-60%)
Luminosity	2.2%	2.2%
MC Statistics	$\sqrt{\sum W^2}$	1-7% (1-2%)
Preshower Ratio	13%	4-8% (4-8%)
Preshower Layer 1	20%	0-2% (0-1%)
Calo E scale	6%	0-30% (0-25%)

Table 7.22: Systematic uncertainties implemented in the statistical analysis framework.

Systematic	Description
Luminosity uncertainty	2.2% from 2022 estimate from ATLAS, same uncertainty is assumed for the 2023 dataset.
Calorimeter energy uncertainty	A fudge factor of 1.088, 6% uncertainty
Preshower ratio uncertainty	A fudge factor of 1.13, 13% uncertainty
Preshower Layer 1 uncertainty	A fudge factor of 1.20, 20% uncertainty
Generator uncertainty	Different generator weights, additional 20% uncertainty due to the ALP-W model
Neutrino background uncertainty	Pure MC estimate uncertainties of 88.6%



(a)

(b)

Figure 7.23: Calorimeter EM energy distributions in the preshower and signal regions, showing the composition of the neutrino background expectation separated (a) in terms of neutrino type and (b) in terms of light/charm production. The final energy bin above 1.5 TeV shows the signal region and is indicated by the green arrow.

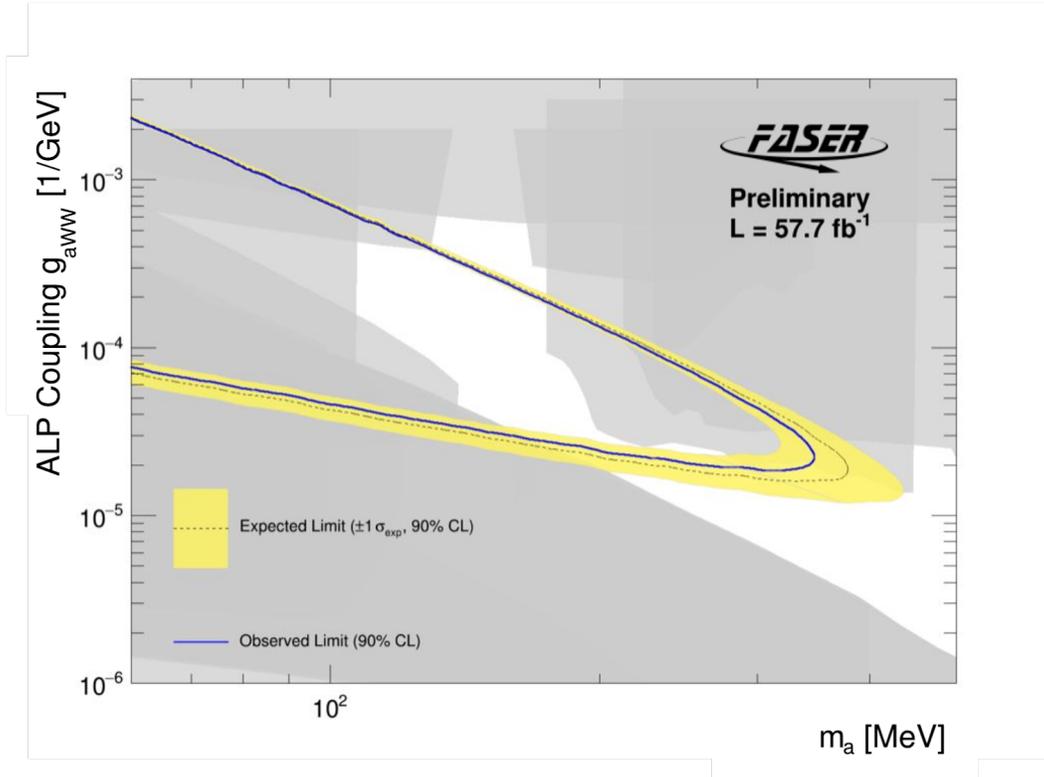


Figure 7.24: Interpretation of the signal region yield as ALP exclusion limits with the assumption of 0.44 neutrino background events. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.

2702 and **signal region**. The plots are overlaid with the neutrino background expectation from MC,
 2703 categorised in terms of neutrino type and also in terms of light/charm hadron component. Overlaid
 2704 are three representative ALP MC signal points. The final bin showing the 1 event at 1.6 TeV
 2705 includes overflows and is indicated with a green arrow.

2706 The statistical interpretation of the results of this analysis is performed using the HistFitter
 2707 statistical framework and described in Chapter 5.4.1. Since no significant excess is observed in the
 2708 signal region, exclusion limits on FASER’s sensitivity to this model can be set. The expected limits
 2709 and sensitivity were evaluated using a model-dependent fit which considers the ALP-W signal model
 2710 and the neutrino background estimate. The sources of systematic uncertainties, described earlier
 2711 in this Chapter, are implemented in the model as nuisance parameters. This analysis considers
 2712 the 90% Confidence Level (CL), in line with other similar dark matter searches. The contour from
 2713 evaluating the CLs values at a 90% confidence level is shown in Figure 7.24. The width of the

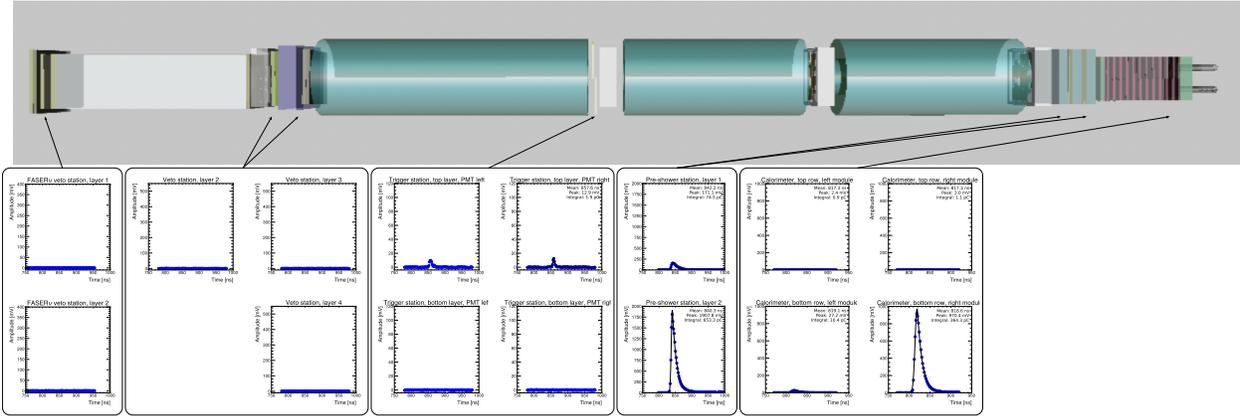


Figure 7.25: An event display of the data event seen in the ALP analysis. Run 8834, eventID 44421456. This event is in time with a collision event and shows signal in the timing scintillator, second preshower layer and the bottom right calorimeter module.

2714 uncertainty band is driven by the dominant systematic uncertainty, the flux of the MC generators
 2715 used in signal and background estimation. The grey regions indicate previous constraints, the
 2716 details of which are given in Chapter 2.

2717 In the case of ALPs coupling to the $SU(2)_L$ gauge boson, FASER probes previously unexplored
 2718 parameter space with this analysis. ALP masses between 100 and 250 MeV, with coupling between
 2719 3×10^{-5} and $5 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ have been excluded by this search.

2720 Figure 7.25 shows the event display of the full FASER detector geometry and the reconstructed
 2721 PMT waveforms from the 1 data event seen in signal region. Characteristics of this event are
 2722 consistent with a signal-like event: leaving no signal in any of the veto scintillators, a small deposit
 2723 in the timing scintillator, and large signatures in the preshower and calorimeter. Figure 7.26 shows
 2724 the reconstructed PMT waveforms for the timing scintillator, preshower scintillator and calorimeter.
 2725 A small amount of charge, 1.9 pC is deposited in the timing scintillator, a large signal of 653.3 pC
 2726 is deposited in preshower layer 1, an indication of a large EM shower, and 364.3 pC is deposited in
 2727 the bottom right calorimeter module.

2728 7.5.1 ALPs Coupling to Photons

2729 The contour from evaluating the CLs values at a 90% confidence level for the ALP-photon model is
 2730 shown in Figure 7.27. In this search, ALP masses up to $m_a \sim 80 \text{ MeV}$ are excluded and previously

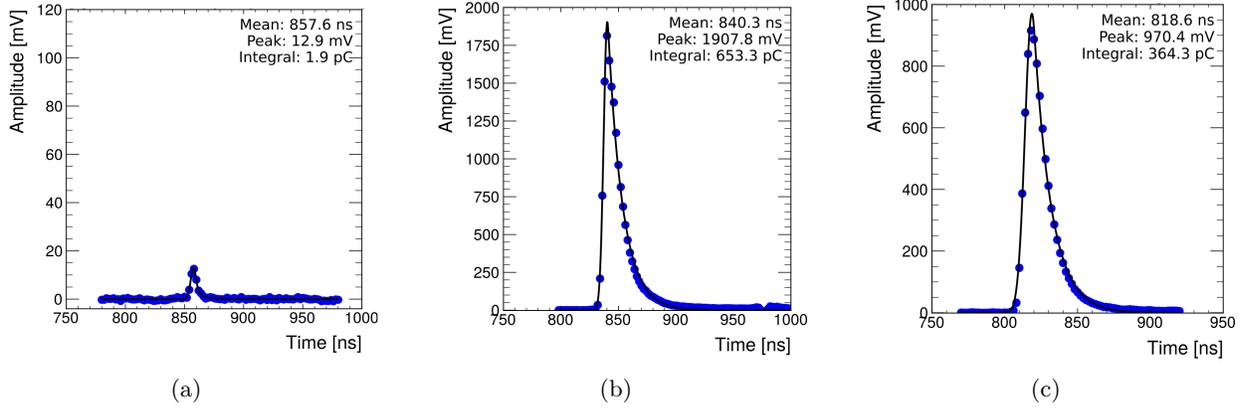


Figure 7.26: Reconstructed PMT waveworms from ALPtrino event (Run 8834, eventID 44421456) in: (a) the top layer of the timing scintillator with a peak of 12.9 mV and an integrated charge of 1.9 pC. (b) the second preshower scintillator layer with a peak of 171.1 mV and an integrated charge of 74.5 pC. (c) the bottom right calorimeter module with a peak of 970.4 mV and an integrated charge of 364.3 pC.

2731 unexplored parameter space around $g_{a\gamma\gamma} \sim 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$ is probed. Existing constraints are set by
 2732 previous experiments: [E141](#), [LEP](#), [NA64](#), [CHARM](#), [E137](#), [NuCal](#), [PrimEx](#), [Belle2](#) and [BESIII](#).

2733 7.5.2 ALPs Coupling to Gluons

2734 The contour from evaluating the CLs values at a 90% confidence level for the ALP-gluon model
 2735 is shown in Figure 7.28. The analysis probes unconstrained parameter space in the region of ALP
 2736 mass around $m_a \sim 100 \text{ MeV}$ and coupling $g_{agg} \sim 10^{-3}$. There is also a region at higher mass
 2737 that FASER explores, at mass $m_a \sim 500 \text{ MeV}$ and coupling $g_{agg} \sim 10^{-4}$. The reason FASER has
 2738 sensitivity in these regions is because of enhanced production rates due to resonant mixing around
 2739 the π^0 mass ($m_{\pi^0} = 139 \text{ MeV}$) and the η meson mass ($m_\eta = 548 \text{ MeV}$). Existing constraints
 2740 from previous experiments include limits from the [E949](#), [NA48](#), [NA62](#), [NuCal](#), [\$\Gamma_{K^+}\$](#) and [BaBar](#)
 2741 collaborations.

2742 7.5.3 Reinterpretations

2743 In addition to axion-like particles, the ALP analysis can be reinterpreted for additional models
 2744 with photonic final states with appropriately long lifetimes. In this section, exclusion limits are
 2745 presented for: the $U(1)B$ model [[143](#)], the up-philic model [[144](#)] and the Type-I two-Higgs doublet
 2746 model (2HDM) [[145](#)]. Additionally, the ALP analysis provides sensitivity to the dark photon

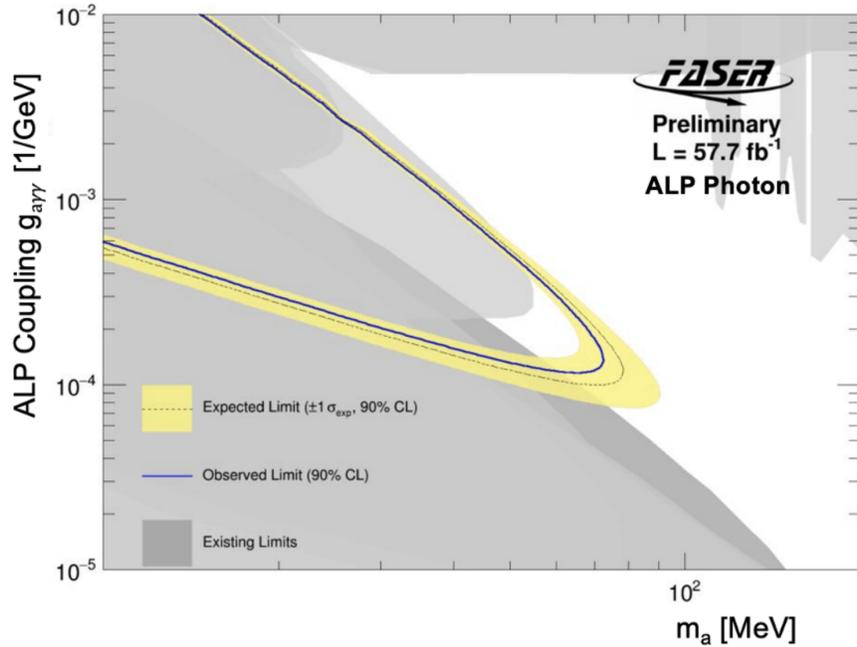


Figure 7.27: Interpretation of the signal region yield as ALP exclusion limits with the assumption of 0.44 neutrino background events. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.

2747 model discussed in this thesis. A reinterpretation of the results is possible without any tracking
 2748 requirements, characterising the e^+e^- decay by its EM deposits.

2749 7.5.3.1 $U(1)_B$ Gauge Boson

2750 The contour from evaluating the CLs values at a 90% confidence level for the $B-L$ gauge boson
 2751 model is shown in Figure 7.29.

2752 7.5.3.2 Up-philic scalar

2753 The contour from evaluating the CLs values at a 90% confidence level for the up-philic model is
 2754 shown in Figure 7.30.

2755 7.5.3.3 Type-I two-Higgs doublet model

2756 The contour from evaluating the CLs values at a 90% confidence level for the 2HDM model is
 2757 shown in Figure 7.31.

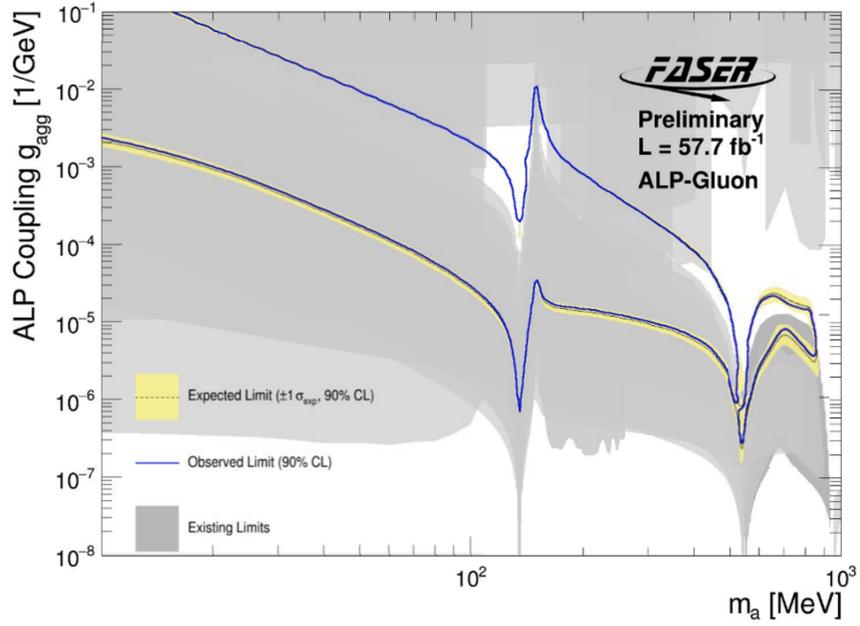


Figure 7.28: Interpretation of the signal region yield as ALP exclusion limits with the assumption of 0.44 neutrino background events. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.

2758 7.5.3.4 Dark Photon

2759 The contour from evaluating the CLs values at a 90% confidence level for the dark photon model
 2760 is shown in Figure 7.32.

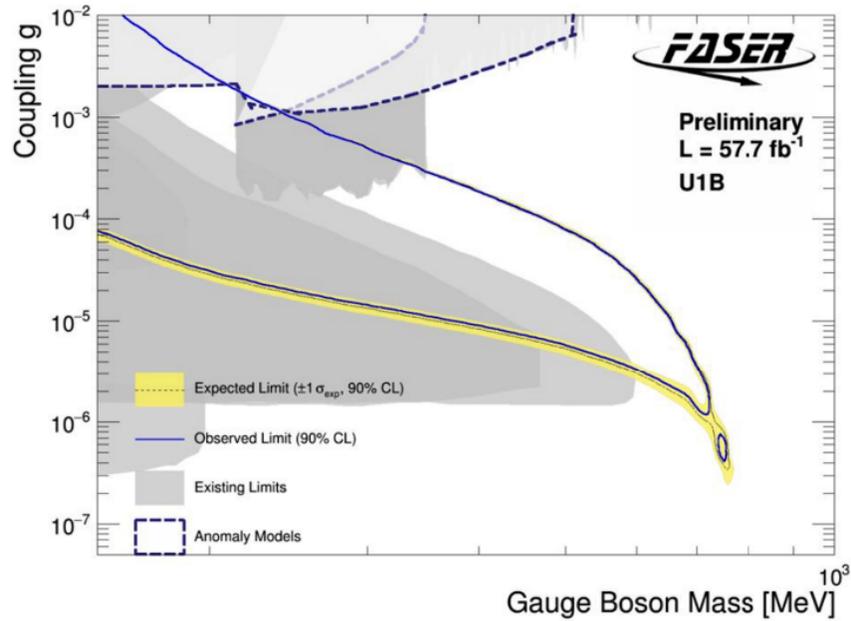


Figure 7.29: Interpretation of the signal region yield as $U(1)B$ gauge boson exclusion limits. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey. Certain models require the introduction of new, heavier fields which can have phenomenological implications, constraints using such models are indicated by the blue dashed line.

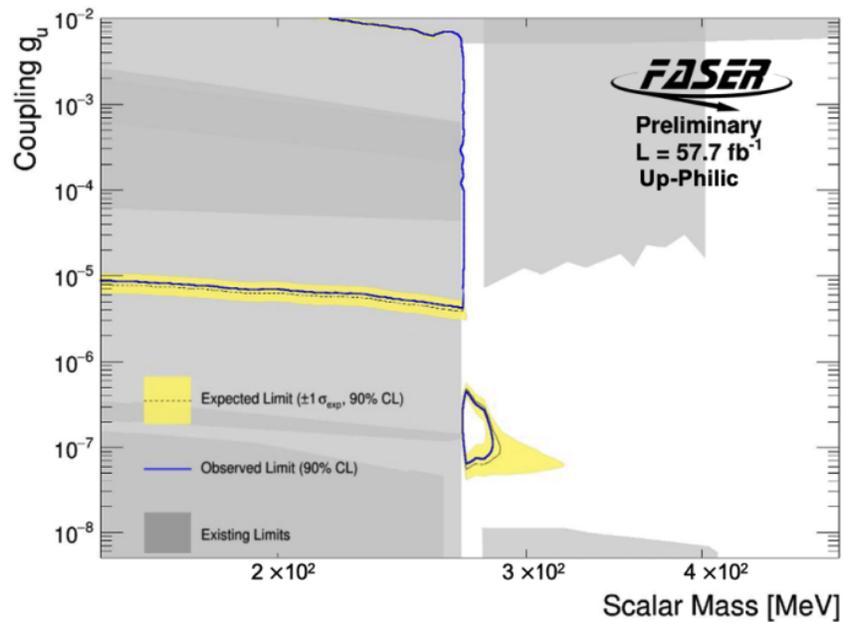


Figure 7.30: Interpretation of the signal region yield as up-philic exclusion limits. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.

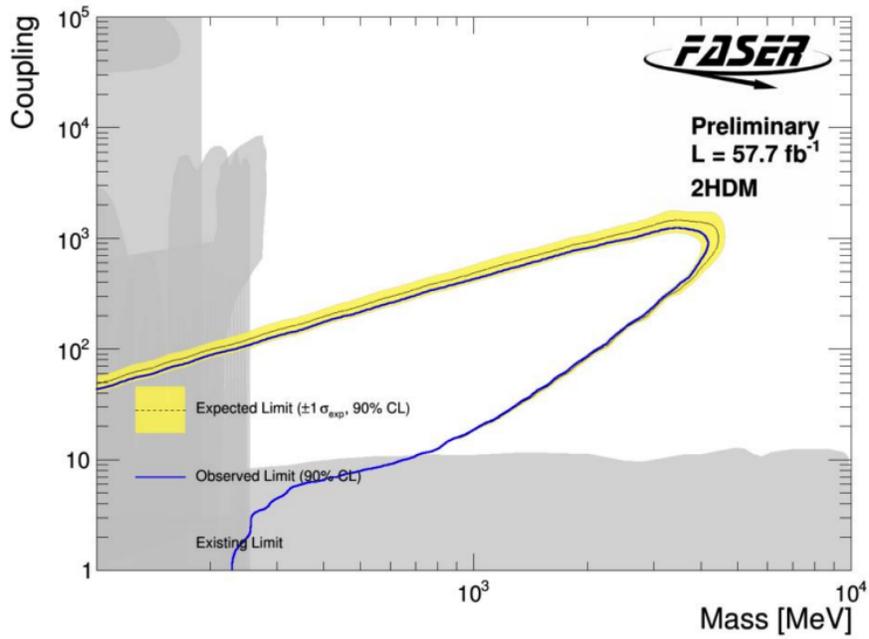


Figure 7.31: Interpretation of the signal region yield as Type-I two-Higgs doublet exclusion limits. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey.

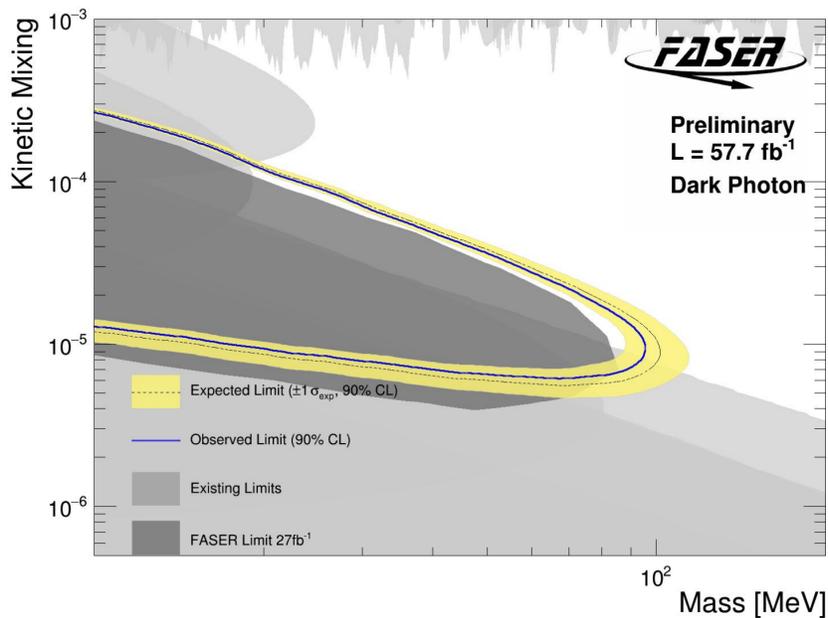


Figure 7.32: Interpretation of the signal region yield as dark photon exclusion limits. The expected limit with 90% CL is shown by the dashed line and yellow uncertainty band. The observed limit is shown by the blue line. Existing constraints are shown in grey, including FASER's previous results.

Chapter 8

The Calorimeter Testbeam and Preshower Detector Upgrade

8.1 The 2021 Calorimeter Testbeam

FASER's 2021 Electromagnetic Calorimeter Test Beam [146] was carried out in order to calibrate the calorimeter modules using electron beams with energy between 10 and 300 GeV. In addition to the electron energy scan, the uniformity of the muon response was measured at 150 GeV, and a pion scan was performed at 200 GeV to study the hadronic response, the PID capabilities of the preshower detector are demonstrated as discussed in Chapter 3.3.2.

Six ECAL modules were tested with an experimental setup that consisted of the two veto scintillators from TI12 acting as trigger scintillators, the IFT tracking station, the preshower detector, and six ECAL modules including the four chosen for use in TI12 and two spare modules. A photograph of this setup in Experimental Hall North 1 (EHN1) at CERN is shown in Figure 8.1. The entire setup was placed on top of a large scissor table so that the equipment could be moved relative to the beam, in order to test the response at various points across the calorimeter modules. A sketch of the setup is shown in Figure 8.2, the different scan points are shown in Figure 8.3.

The PMT signals from the ECAL, preshower, and trigger scintillators are digitised at 500 MHz by 14-bit ADCs and read out in a wide window (1.2 μ s), the integrated charge is summed in a window around the expected peak signal. The readout for most events is triggered by signals in

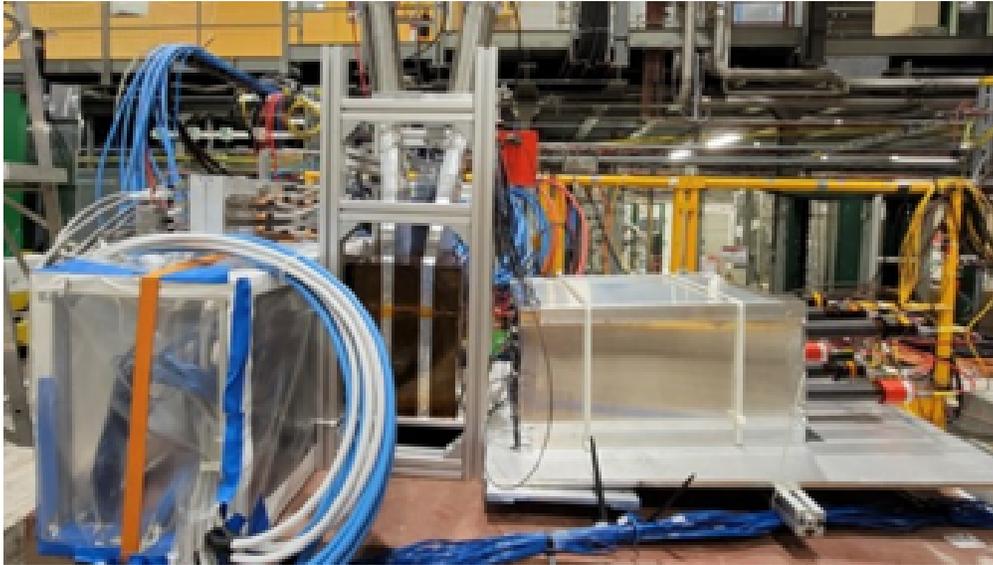


Figure 8.1: A photograph of the test beam setup in Experimental Hall North (EHN1) at CERN

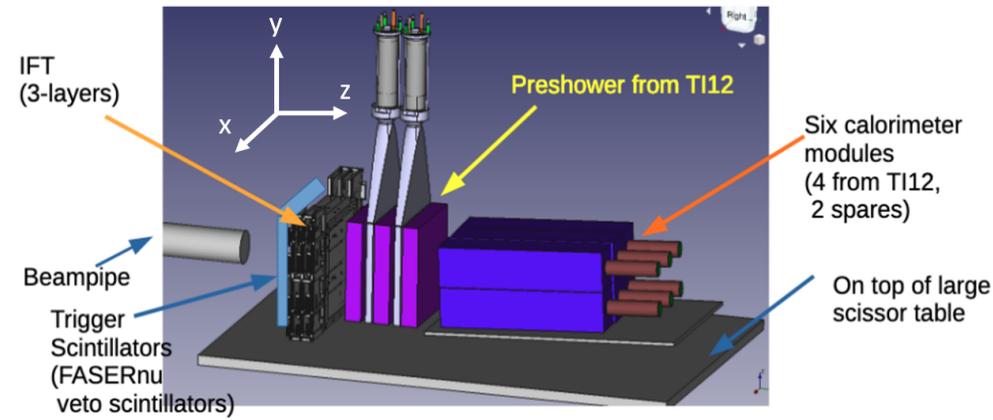


Figure 8.2: A diagram of the components used in the test beam. The coordinate system is also shown.



Figure 8.3: The different scan point positions used in the test beam. Scan point 8 represents the centre of the top middle ECAL module.

2780 both trigger scintillators exceeding a predefined threshold at the same time. Hits in the tracker
 2781 stations are read out in a 75 ns window and used to reconstruct tracks. The response of the
 2782 calorimeter modules is studied using events selected as follows:

- 2783 • The event trigger bit must indicate that the front two trigger scintillators were hit
- 2784 • Only one track must be found in the event, with tracks reconstructed according to a dedicated
 2785 tracking algorithm
- 2786 • Tracks must be relatively straight such that the angular spread in the x and y plane is $|\theta_x|$
 2787 and $|\theta_y| < 2^\circ$
- 2788 • The track position must be within a $20 \text{ mm} \times 20 \text{ mm}$ square area surrounding the beam
 2789 position, obtained from extrapolating the track to the face of the calorimeter

2790 8.1.1 Energy Calibration

2791 Calibration of the calorimeter modules was carried out using test beam data. The charge of
 2792 the signal in the calorimeter PMTs is compared to the MPV of the PMT charge of a MIP. The
 2793 calorimeter settings used during physics data taking include the installation of an optical filter in
 2794 front of the PMTs and a low HV setting, to ensure that TeV scale EM showers are not saturated
 2795 in the calorimeter. Due to this, the MIP signal is not visible. To overcome this, and to measure

2796 the MIP signal, a higher HV setting is used and a correction applied to the measured MIP signal.
 2797 This correction, to extrapolate to the conditions used for physics data-taking, is known as the Gain
 2798 Ratio.

2799 The MIP equivalence, N_{MIP} is used in the calibration, in addition to being used as a variable in
 2800 the ALP analysis event selection. It is calculated using Q_{signal} , the PMT charge of a signal and the
 2801 gain ratio. Therefore, the size of the signal relative to the charge of a MIP signal can be calculated
 2802 according to Equation 8.1:

$$N_{MIP} = \frac{Q_{signal} \times \text{Gain Ratio}}{Q_{\mu}}. \quad (8.1)$$

2803 This N_{MIP} is used to estimate the initial calorimeter EM energy of a particle:

$$E_{EM} = N_{MIP} \times \frac{E_{TB}}{\bar{N}_{MIP}^{TB}} \quad (8.2)$$

2804 where E_{TB} is the beam energy of an electron from test beam data and \bar{N}_{MIP}^{TB} is the average N_{MIP}
 2805 from test beam data. The value of $\frac{E_{TB}}{\bar{N}_{MIP}^{TB}}$ is equal to approximately 330 MeV, according to LHCb
 2806 test beam data using the same ECAL calorimeter modules [147]. Therefore, the estimation of the
 2807 calorimeter EM energy can be obtained in both data and MC according to:

$$E_{EM} = N_{MIP} \times 330 \text{ MeV}. \quad (8.3)$$

2808 8.1.2 Test Beam Simulation

2809 FASER's test beam simulation initially used ParticleGun to simulate single particles at a fixed
 2810 energy, the Geant4 package [148] is used to model the propagation of particles through the test
 2811 beam geometry. LHCb test beam results using the same ECAL modules were used for comparison
 2812 when building the simulation and studying the energy response and resolution, before it could be
 2813 validated by FASER's own test beam data. At this stage, the simulation does not include any
 2814 digitisation. Digitisation is a step which mimics the detector response, converting the simulation
 2815 output into an output similar to the PMT pulses of real data. A dedicated geometry was developed
 2816 for the test beam simulation, shown in an event display produced based on ATLAS VP1 software
 2817 [149] in Figure 8.4.

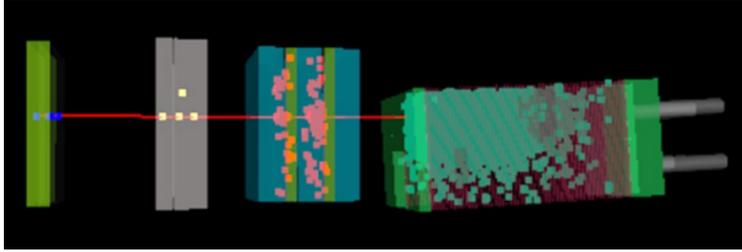


Figure 8.4: An event display showing the simulated hits of a 100 GeV electron in the test beam MC geometry

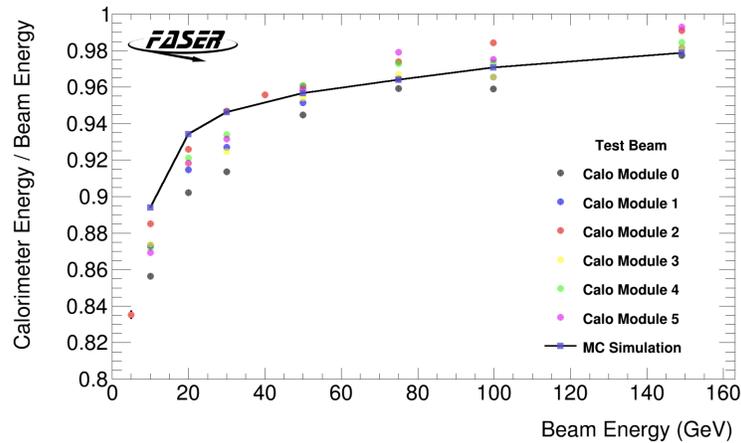
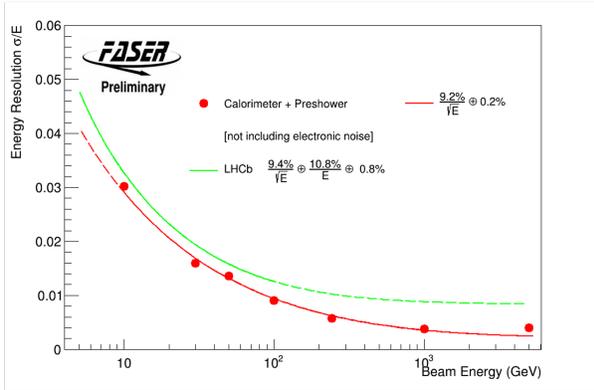


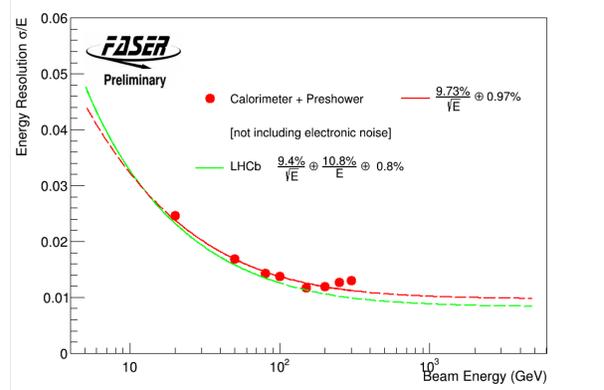
Figure 8.5: The calibrated EM energy in the calorimeter of MC simulation compared to test beam response of each of the six ECAL modules.

2818 This initial simulation showed some discrepancy compared to the test beam data, the difference
 2819 in the simulated calorimeter response compared to data taken at various scan points is shown in
 2820 Figure 8.5. Applying a correction factor of 8.8% to the calibrated MC calorimeter energy improved
 2821 the agreement between data and MC. The correction factor is obtained by comparing the average
 2822 calibrated energy in each of the six ECAL modules to the calibrated energy in MC at 100 GeV.
 2823 The calibrated EM energy is used in the analyses discussed in this thesis, where the FASER MC
 2824 geometry implements the same material description and local calorimeter effects as included in the
 2825 test beam studies.

2826 As discussed, the reason for this discrepancy in test beam data and MC arises primarily from
 2827 differences in the material description in the MC geometry compared to the actual setup. The
 2828 inclusion of Tyvek paper has a large impact on the simulated response. The accurate description of
 2829 the various local calorimeter effects discussed in Chapter 4.2.2 also affects response and resolution.
 2830 Another important factor concerning the accuracy of the test beam MC is the realistic simulation



(a)



(b)

Figure 8.6: The simulated calorimeter energy resolution in (a) the original test beam MC and (b) the updated test beam MC that includes the most up-to-date material description and implementation of the studied local effects in the calorimeter. Compared with parameterisation of LHCb test beam results in green.

2831 of the particle beam and the setup specific to the H2 beamline used in EHN1. After updating
 2832 the material description in FASER MC geometry, implementing the local corrections and non-
 2833 uniformities discussed previously, and using the most realistic simulation of the CMS H2 beamline
 2834 [150], the change in the simulated calorimeter energy resolution is clear. Figure 8.6 shows the
 2835 improved agreement in energy resolution compared to previous LHCb test beam results using the
 2836 same ECAL modules.

2837 8.1.3 Preshower Correction

2838 In order to study the isolated response of the calorimeter in this test beam, it is necessary to apply
 2839 a correction factor to the measured energy response to account for the energy lost by a particular
 2840 particle as it traverses the preshower in this test beam setup. The preshower “steals” a portion
 2841 of the EM shower from the calorimeter, as a direct result of the two radiation lengths of tungsten
 2842 radiator. This effect varies on an event-by-event basis and thus degrades the energy resolution. This
 2843 is corrected for in order to obtain the most accurate calorimeter energy resolution measurement.

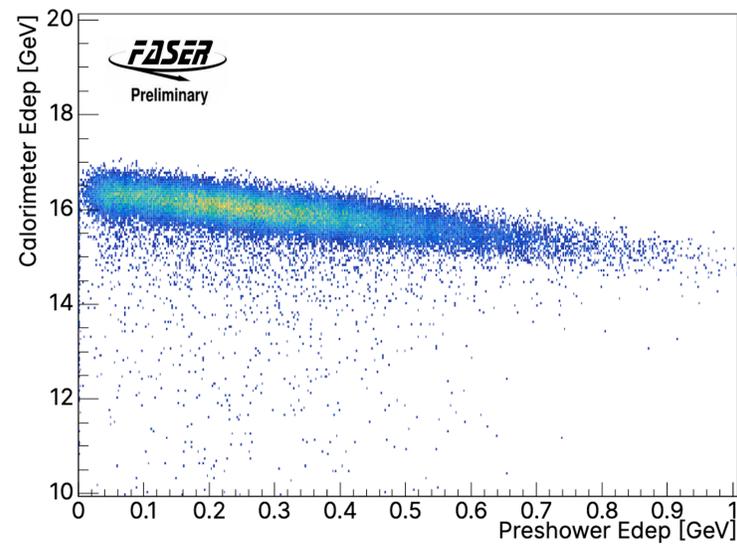


Figure 8.7: The energy deposited in the calorimeter modules vs the preshower scintillator layers in test beam simulation (100 GeV electron).

2844 The total deposited energy in the preshower station compared to the total deposited energy in the
 2845 calorimeter for a 100 GeV electron in test beam MC is shown in Figure 8.7.

2846 A preshower correction was derived to mimic the absence of a preshower station, taking into
 2847 account the deposited charge in the calorimeter and preshower station:

$$Q_{corrected} = Q_{calo} + (m * Q_{preshower}),$$

2848 where Q is the total deposited charge and m is the gradient derived from the fit of the deposits in
 2849 the preshower vs calorimeter. The preshower correction is applied in both data and MC, resulting
 2850 in an increased energy response and a reduced energy resolution, shown in Figure 8.8.

2851 8.1.4 Energy Resolution

2852 The calorimeter energy resolution is defined in Chapter 4.2.3. The measurement of energy resolution
 2853 from test beam data compared to test beam MC is shown in Figure 8.9. The energy response and
 2854 resolution show generally good agreement with some differences that are generally understood.
 2855 The test beam MC agrees well with parameterised results from LHCb, differences in data and MC
 2856 at higher energies is likely related to the lack of electronic noise implemented in the MC at this
 2857 stage of the analysis. The results show that the calorimeter energy resolution is $\mathcal{O}(1\%)$ in the high

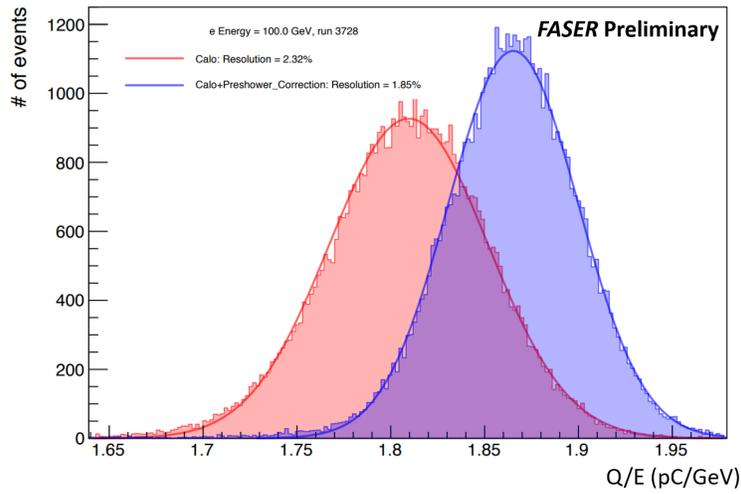


Figure 8.8: The effect of the preshower correction on the charge deposited by a 100 GeV electron in test beam data. The preshower corrected charge (red) shows a reduced and improved energy resolution.

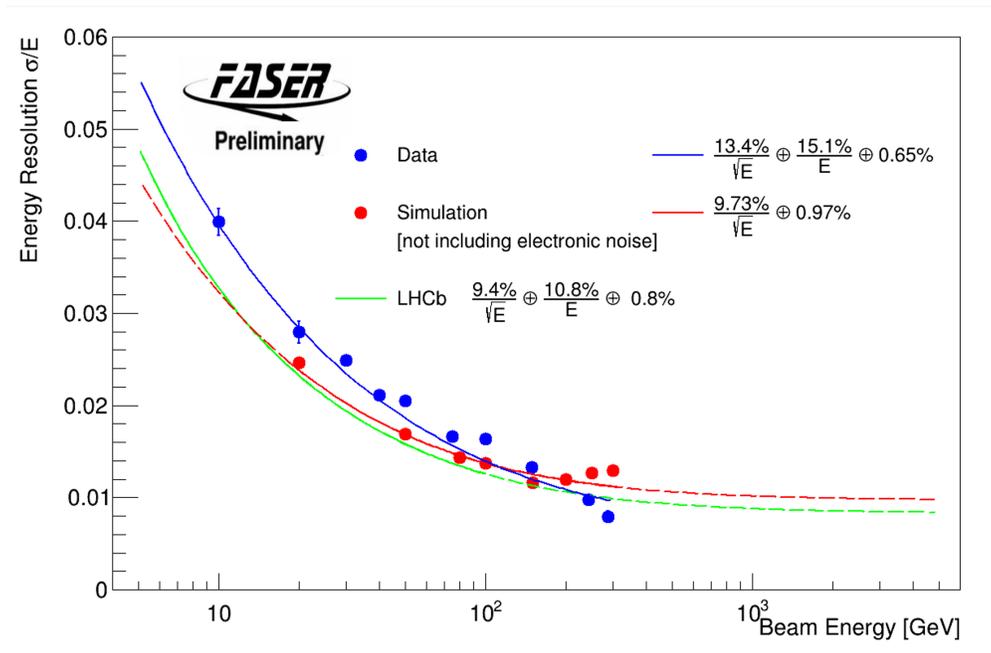


Figure 8.9: Calorimeter energy resolution measurement in test beam data (blue) and simulation (red), compared to a parameterisation of LHCb test beam results.

2858 energy range relevant to the analyses discussed in this thesis. This level of energy resolution in the
2859 calorimeter is more than sufficient for physics analysis.

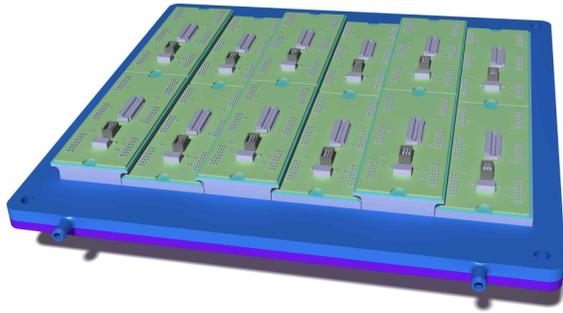
2860 **8.2 High-Precision Tungsten-Silicon Preshower Detector Upgrade**

2861 The high-resolution preshower upgrade [151] will be installed in front of the existing calorimeter
2862 and will partially replace the present FASER preshower detector, shown in Figure 3.13 in the
2863 Chapter 3. The current preshower contains 2 radiation lengths (χ_0) of tungsten absorber. In the
2864 proposed upgrade, the layout will consist of tungsten absorber alternated with planes of monolithic
2865 silicon pixel detectors which will provide the longitudinal granularity needed for the detection of
2866 two-photon signatures, while maximising the ability to reject background. The plan is that the
2867 preshower installation will be finished in the YETS at the end of 2024.

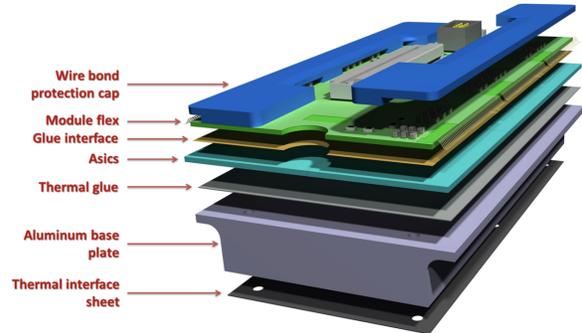
2868 The ALP-W model discussed in this thesis is the model chosen to characterise the performance
2869 of the preshower detector, the decay signature to two high energy photons makes it the ideal choice
2870 for such studies. FORESEE is used to investigate the photon energy in various signal samples, at
2871 different positions across the parameter space. The results show the need for a preshower detector
2872 that is sensitive to a large range of photon energies, which is in agreement with signal optimisation
2873 and characterisation studies performed during the ALP analysis efforts.

2874 **8.2.1 Sub-detector Layout**

2875 The mechanical frame that surrounds the current preshower detector can be removed to allow room
2876 for the new preshower detector. The upper frame that holds the calorimeter will remain in place.
2877 The new preshower detector will be made up of six detector planes and two scintillators. Two of
2878 the detector planes will have $1.7\chi_0$ of W and Si , the remaining four will have $0.65\chi_0$ of W and Si .
2879 There are 6 planes, with 12 modules per plane, Figure 8.10a shows the 12 modules arranged in a
2880 single plane. Each module contains 6 ASICs with an array of 208×108 pixels. Figure 8.10b shows
2881 a CAD diagram of the components that make up each preshower module. Each module contains
2882 6 ASICs attached to an aluminium base plate. The thermal interface sheet integrates the module
2883 with the cooling plate. The module flex contains the electrical interconnection to an external patch
2884 panel and SMD (surface mount devices) components.



(a)



(b)

Figure 8.10: (a) One of the 6 preshower planes with 12 modules mounted on a $20 \times 20 \text{ cm}^2$, 5 mm thick cooling plate. The overlap along the long edges of the modules minimises the dead area of the chips. (b) CAD diagram of the components that make up each preshower module. Each module contains 6 ASICs attached to an aluminium base plate. The thermal interface sheet ingrates the module with the cooling plate. The module flex contains the electrical interconnection to an external patch panel and SMD components (Surface Mount Devices).

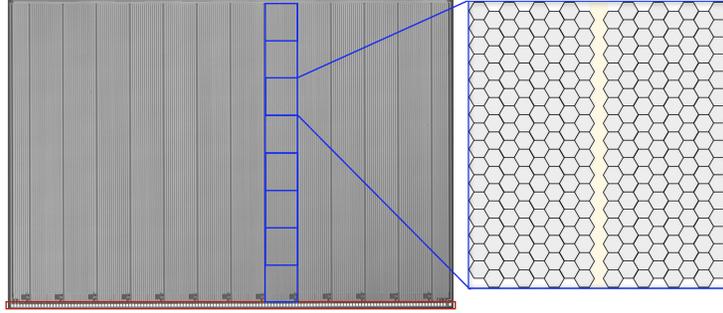


Figure 8.11: An example of one of the ASIC chips, the structure of the super-columns and 13 super pixels are indicated in blue, with a diagram of a single SP on the right-hand side, pads run along the bottom of the chip for probing (red).

2885 8.2.2 Monolithic Readout Chip

2886 The monolithic active pixel sensor uses 130 nm SiGe BiCMOS [151] technology. The chip will be
 2887 capable of distinguishing particle showers generated by photons of energy 100 GeV to 3 TeV, with
 2888 a separation between the primary photons above $200 \mu\text{m}$. The high dynamic range of the readout
 2889 chips translates to charge measurements from 0.5 up to 65 fC, this corresponds to the huge charges
 2890 deposited in single pixels at the core of the electromagnetic showers initiated in the tungsten planes
 2891 by high energy photons.

2892 The ASIC chip is $2.2 \times 1.5 \text{ cm}^2$ and is made up of 13 “super-columns” (SC) subdivided into
 2893 8 “super-pixels” (SP) each containing 16 rows of 16 pixels as shown in Figure 8.11, with a $40 \mu\text{m}$
 2894 digital column running down the middle of each SP for masking and readout.

2895 A slow-control interface which implements an SPI (Serial Peripheral Interface) protocol allows
 2896 configuration of the chip and the internal DACs (Digital-to-Analogue Converters). During chip
 2897 configuration and operations testing, probe needles can be aligned with the pads, marked in red on
 2898 Figure 8.11, in order to deliver test pulses or masking commands.

2899 8.2.3 Prototype Tests for Pre-production

2900 In order to test the electronics and debug software and firmware needed for the preshower detector
 2901 upgrade, pre-production versions of the ASIC readout chips were designed and produced. These
 2902 chips contain 3 super-columns, rather than the 13 SCs that make up the final production chips.
 2903 Their behaviour is monitored and tested by mounting the chips into the probe station. A dedicated



(a)

(b)

Figure 8.12: (a) FASER pre-production probe card used to probe the pre-production chips. (b) Marks from the probe card needles left on the pre-production chip pads after establishing a good contact.

2904 FASER pre-production probe card with probe needles is inserted into the setup, aligning the pads
 2905 at the bottom of the chip with the probe needles, as seen in Figure 8.12a. A good contact with the
 2906 probe needles is required for adequate communication with the chip, Figure 8.12b shows the result
 2907 of good contact with the pads.

2908 These tests were carried out initially to test the probe card system and to obtain standard
 2909 measurements of the chips to give an idea of the yield of working chips. The setup is connected
 2910 to a FPGA, the chips are placed on the chuck and loaded into the probe station, whose setup
 2911 includes a microscope and camera to monitor the position of the chip and to perform alignment
 2912 with the needles attached to the probe card. Using the switching matrix and SMUs provided by the
 2913 probe station, test scenarios can be setup to monitor the voltage and current supplied to the chip,
 2914 configure the chips and perform monitoring whilst testing the DAQ. Figure 8.13 shows the results
 2915 of an LV test performed on a pre-production chip. The current delivered to the FPGA board is
 2916 stable, and the LV and threshold currents quickly configure once the configuration command is sent
 2917 at around 9s into the test. This chip configures well and shows no sign of abnormalities or defects.

2918 Once it is confirmed that the chip is successfully configured through the results of the LV test, a

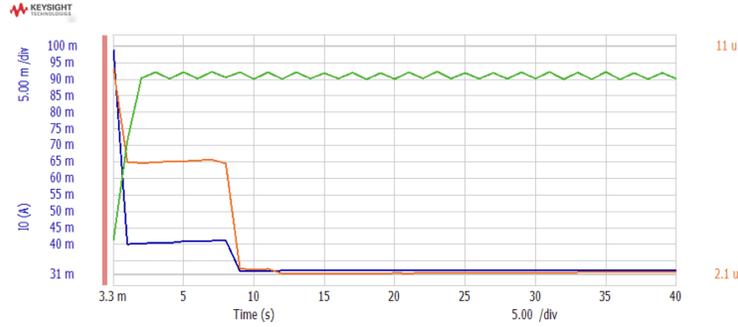


Figure 8.13: LV test to configure pre-production chip. In blue is the LV current I_0 , in orange is the threshold current I_{thr} and green is the current pulled by the FPGA.

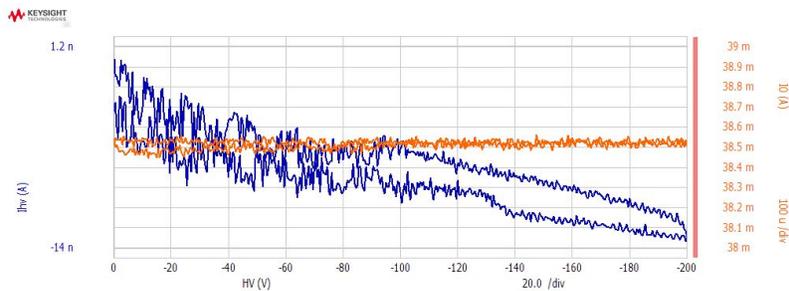


Figure 8.14: HV test to characterise pre-production chip

2919 HV scan is performed between 0 V and -150 V in steps of -100 mV. The results of such a test are
 2920 shown in Figure 8.14, the chip is configured at -10 V and remains stable from this point, with no
 2921 sign of breakdown. The current pulled by the HV reaches a maximum of -9.3 nA and the current
 2922 pulled by the LV is 34.5 mA, which is well within the expected range. Additional tests are carried
 2923 out to confirm that the DAQ is responding and data is being sent and readout from the chip. This
 2924 includes searching for problematic pixels within the pixel matrix. This chip passes all tests and
 2925 confirms that the probe card system works.

2926 8.2.4 Tests of Production Chips

2927 Before the arrival of the final chips, ready for characterisation and testing in a dedicated test beam
 2928 in August 2024, a wafer of the production-level chip was produced for further testing. Figure
 2929 8.15 shows the wafer being loaded into the probe station. The ASICs in this test wafer respond
 2930 to programming commands according to expectations. The chip was configured correctly and
 2931 demonstrated sensitivity to the lowest value of testpulse sent, which corresponds to 0.5 fC, consistent
 2932 with having sensitivity to a MIP signal. An oscilloscope included in this setup is useful for visualising

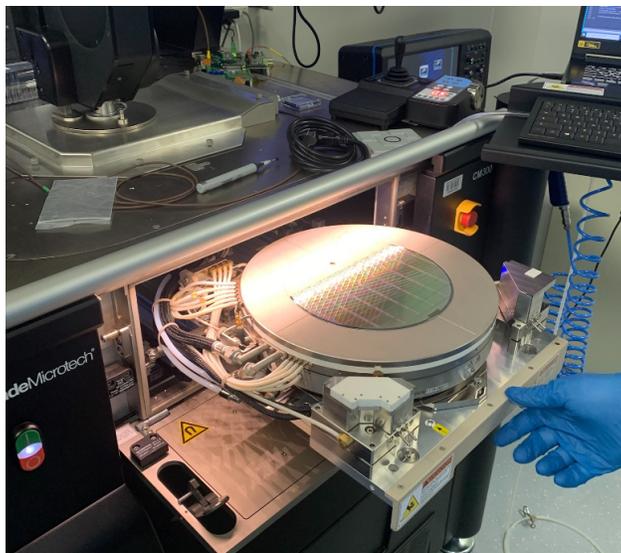


Figure 8.15: A wafer containing multiple chips being loaded into the probe station.

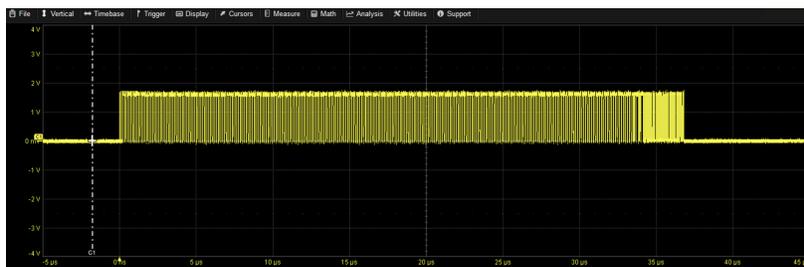


Figure 8.16: Oscilloscope reading of injected test pulse showing a single, unmasked pixel.

2933 the chip’s response to the testpulse. Figure 8.16 shows a typical testpulse on the oscilloscope, in
 2934 the case when there is a single unmasked pixel in the chip, without any noise.

2935 The final chips will be characterised and assembled over summer, in preparation for a preshower
 2936 testbeam. These initial tests give confidence that a high yield of good quality chips will be available
 2937 for the module assembly. The final preshower detector will be installed in TI12 in YETS 2024.

2938 8.2.5 Implications for Future ALPs Search

2939 The upgraded preshower detector, with its ability to distinguish closely-spaced, highly energetic
 2940 di-photon signatures, will have a huge impact on low-background analysis searching for photonic
 2941 final states. Of particular interest, especially given the focus of this thesis, is the ALP with coupling
 2942 to the $SU(2)_L$ gauge boson. Assuming the preshower upgrade is operational for the data-taking
 2943 from 2025, the impact on physics reach is substantial. Figure 8.17 shows the parameter space that

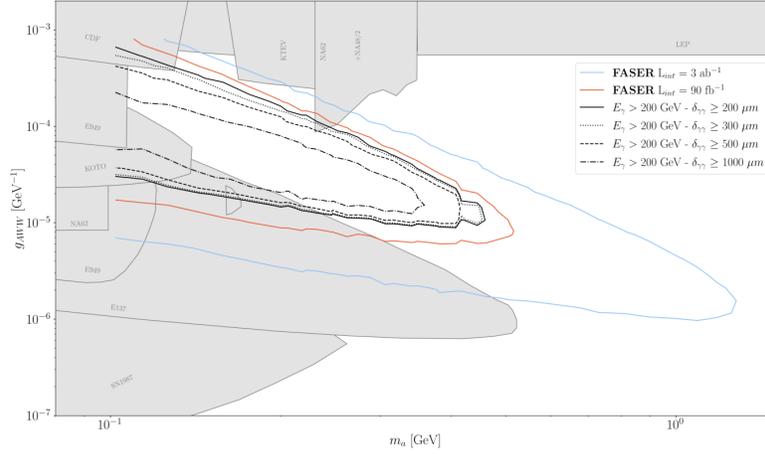


Figure 8.17: The predicted physics reach with the upgraded preshower detector in the ALP-W parameter space.

2944 could be explored with the improved sensitivity provided by the preshower detector for the ALP-W
 2945 model. Note that this figure does not show the current reach for ALP-W discussed in this thesis.
 2946 The blue line shows the reach in the case of an ideal detector performance with 3 ab^{-1} collected,
 2947 the red line shows the same but for a luminosity of 90 fb^{-1} . Considering realistic detector effects
 2948 at $L = 90 \text{ fb}^{-1}$, the reach is equal to the solid black line. This is already a considerable increase in
 2949 explored parameter space compared to the current reach with the ALP-W analysis with a luminosity
 2950 of 57.7 fb^{-1} .

Chapter 9

Summary

FASER has had an extremely successful start to life, with smooth operations and high quality data-taking in Run 3. The experiment has undergone multiple test beams, two of which are mentioned in this thesis. Numerous searches for BSM physics have yielded world-leading constraints and explored new parameter space.

Chapter 6 describes FASER’s search for dark photons using Run 3 data at a centre of mass energy of $\sqrt{s} = 13.6$ TeV corresponding to an integrated luminosity of 27.0 fb^{-1} collected in 2022. The search sets world-leading exclusion limits for dark photons with mass of $17 \text{ MeV} < m_{A'} < 70$ MeV and coupling of $2 \times 10^{-5} < \epsilon < 1 \times 10^{-4}$.

Chapter 7 describes FASER’s search for axion-like particles. This analysis also uses Run 3 data, corresponding to an integrated luminosity of 57.7 fb^{-1} collected in 2022 and 2023. This search sets world-leading exclusion limits for ALPs with mass of $100 < m_a < 250$ MeV and coupling of $3 \times 10^{-5} < g_{aWW} < 5 \times 10^{-4} \text{ GeV}^{-1}$.

The various reinterpretation models discussed in this thesis, for both the dark photon analysis and the axion-like particle analysis, demonstrate the versatility and breadth of FASER’s physics reach. World-leading exclusion limits have been set for: the $B - L$ gauge boson, the ALP with coupling to photons, the ALP with coupling to gluons, the $U(1)B$ gauge boson, the up-philic scalar, and the Type-I Two Higgs doublet model.

Chapter 8.2.5 highlights the increased sensitivity to ALP searches that FASER will have in the future, following detector upgrades. In general, FASER has a broad and ambitious plan for the remainder of Run 3 and Run 4.

2973 **Appendix A**

2974 **FASER's EM Calorimeter**

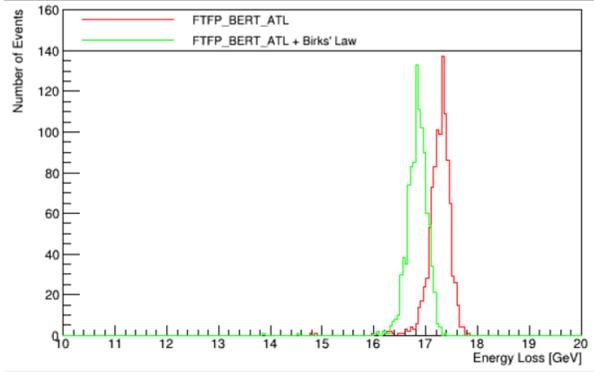
2975 **A.1 Calorimeter Corrections**

2976 Figure A.1a shows the difference in deposited energy in the calorimeter with and without the
2977 implementation of Birks' Law correction to the energy loss of a charged particle in the simulation
2978 of FASER's ECAL modules. Figure A.1b shows the difference in energy response when the local
2979 non-uniformity correction is applied, which accounts for variation at the cell edges and variation
2980 in response close to WLS fibres in the ECAL module. The implementation of Tyvek into the
2981 simulation geometry for the calorimeter also impacts the energy loss, shown in Figure A.2.

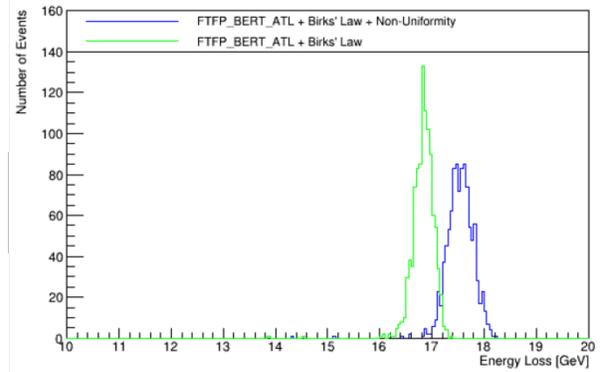
2982 The addition of the Birks' law correction decreases the energy deposited in the calorimeter by
2983 around 3%. The non-uniformity corrections increase the energy deposited by a similar amount,
2984 this effect also reduces energy resolution. The larger density of Tyvek was chosen and implemented
2985 into the simulation, decreasing the deposited energy by around 6%.

2986 **A.2 Calorimeter Energy Uncertainty**

2987 A 6% uncertainty is assigned to the calorimeter energy threshold used in both the dark photon and
2988 the ALP analysis. This overall uncertainty is calculated by including the individual uncertainties
2989 in the various stages of calibration of both data and MC. The correction of the MC using the
2990 test beam data as calibration also needs to be taken into account in this step. A summary and
2991 description of each of these components that leads to the determination of the total uncertainty on



(a)



(b)

Figure A.1: The change in energy loss in the calorimeter due to the implementation of (a) Birks' Law correction (red) and (b) non-uniformity correction (blue). The green represents the simulation setup without the correction, FTFP BERT ATL refers to the physics list used in the simulation.

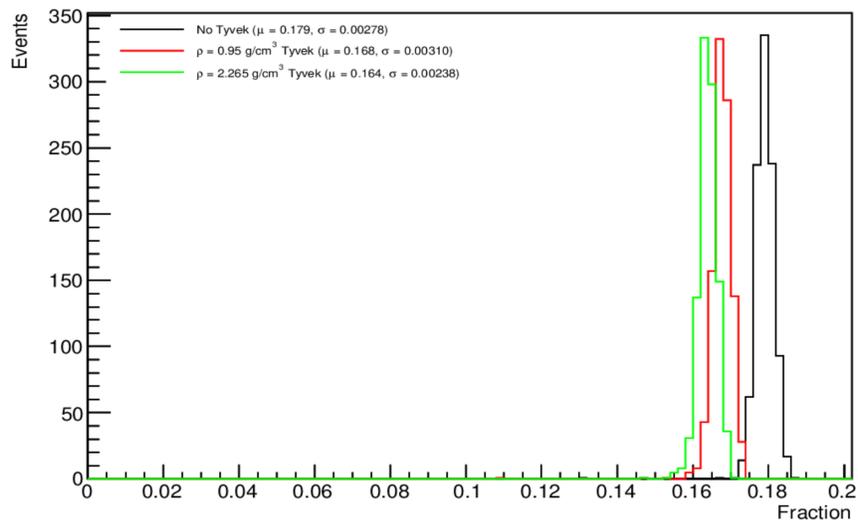


Figure A.2: The change in fraction of deposited energy due to the addition of Tyvek paper into the ECAL simulation, compared to the setup without Tyvek (black). Two different Tyvek densities were investigated 0.95 g/cm^3 (red) and 2.265 g/cm^3 (green).

Table A.1: Summary and description of each of the sources of uncertainty on the calorimeter energy threshold, leading to a total uncertainty of 6.06%.

Source	Uncertainty	Description
TI12 MIP fit	1.90%	Uncertainty associated with MPV fit of MIP data
TI12 HV gain	3.37%	Uncertainty associated with the extrapolation of the HV gain curves in data
TI12 PMT drift	1.45%	Uncertainty due to the drift in the calo PMTs over time
TI12 MIP fit (MC)	1.16%	Uncertainty associated with MPV fit of MIP MC
TB data calibration	0.74%	TB MC energy correction
TB MC calibration	2.35%	TB MC energy correction
TB MC calibration extrapolation	2.46%	TB MC energy correction extrapolated to 500 GeV threshold
Local effects	2.5%	Uncertainty due to energy loss at edges and position dependence
Total	6%	

2992 this energy selection is given in Table A.1. The process of extrapolating the test beam data, which
 2993 is at a lower energy, to the higher energy calorimeter energy selection used in analysis is shown in
 2994 Figure A.3. The total uncertainty in comparing the calibrated energies at 500 GeV in data and
 2995 MC is measured to be 6%.

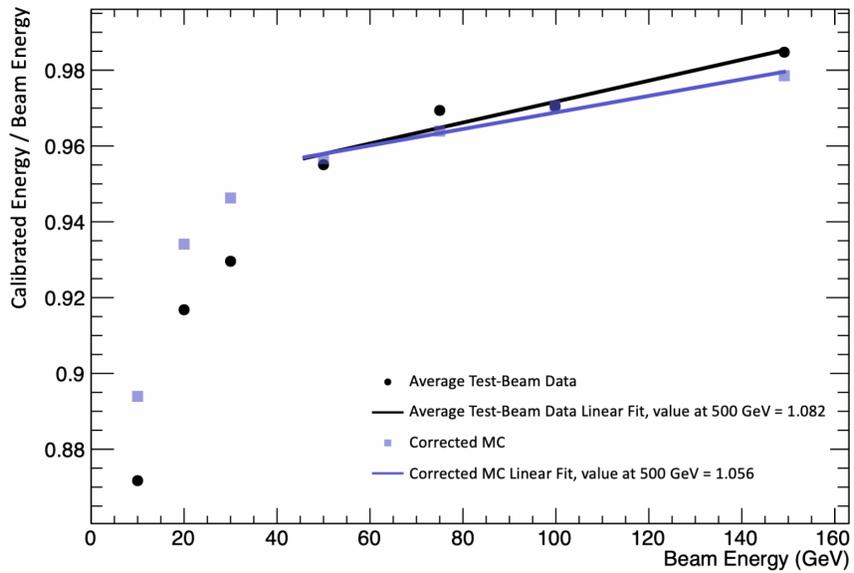


Figure A.3: The average of the calibrated energies of each of the six test beam calorimeter modules as a function of beam energy in data and MC. The average linear fit in each case shows the extrapolation process to higher energy (500 GeV) to evaluate the uncertainty at this point. The fits results in a difference of 2.46% at 500 GeV.

2996 Appendix B

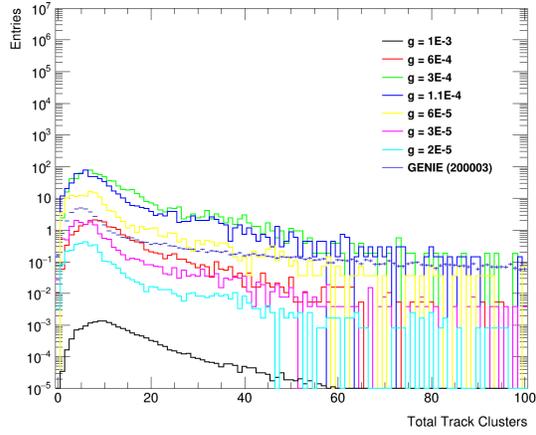
2997 ALP Signal Selection: Tracking

2998 Variables

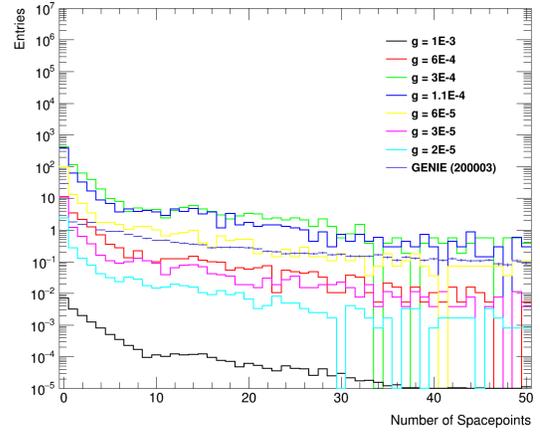
2999 The ALP-W analysis does not use a track selection. Various track parameters were investigated to
3000 determine whether a tracking cut would further discriminate signal from background. An important
3001 factor to note is the lack of tracks present in the ALP-W signal model, which decays to two high
3002 energy photons at the mass and coupling to which FASER is sensitive. A small fraction of photons
3003 are expected to convert, such that a requirement of zero tracks would impact signal yield. In
3004 addition, the main background expected in this analysis is from neutrinos.

3005 The number of spacepoints, number of track segments and number of track clusters in ALP-W
3006 MC signal samples with mass = 100 GeV and seven different couplings (g_{aWW}) were compared to
3007 a neutrino MC sample (labelled here as 200003).

3008 The number of clusters, defined as adjacent hit strips in the same side of a module in a tracking
3009 station layer, is shown in Figure B.1a. The number of spacepoints, defined as the x position of
3010 combined clusters from both sides of a module, is shown in Figure B.1b. The number of track
3011 segments, defined as 4 or more clusters that could form a possible track, is shown in Figure B.2.



(a)



(b)

Figure B.1: (a) Number of clusters and (b) Number of spacepoints in 7 ALP-W MC signal samples compared with GENIE neutrino MC. Histograms represent the signal samples, the blue markers show the neutrino MC.

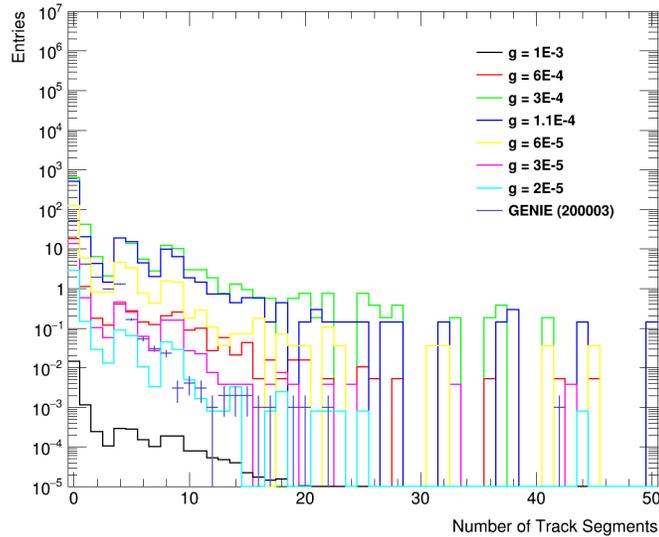


Figure B.2: Number of track segments in 7 ALP-W MC signal samples compared with GENIE neutrino MC. Histograms represent the signal samples, the blue markers show the neutrino MC.

3012 Glossary

3013 **2HDM** Type-I two-Higgs doublet model. 146, 147

3014 **ACTS** A Common Tracking Software. 54

3015 **ADC** Analog-to-digital converter. 55, 56

3016 **ALICE** A Large Ion Collider Experiment, an LHC experiment located at IP2. 31

3017 **ALP** Axion-like particle. i, 1–4, 15, 21–26, 28, 65, 69, 71–74, 78, 106, 107, 109, 116, 117, 140, 146,
3018 154, 166

3019 **ASIC** Application Specific Integrated Circuit, used for readout in SCT modules and upgraded
3020 preshower detector. 45

3021 **ATLAS** A Toroidal LHC Apparatus, an LHC experiment located at IP1. 1, 16, 31–35, 45, 53, 78

3022 **BaBar** The BaBar Experiment, the name is derived from the nomenclature for $B\bar{B}$. 21, 28

3023 **BC** Benchmark Case, used to identify PBC benchmark models. 15

3024 **BCID** Bunch Counter ID, generated by the TLB to indicate the number of clock cycles that have
3025 passed between the last BCR and trigger signal. 49, 80, 94, 107, 109, 131, 132

3026 **BCR** Bunch Counter Reset signal. 49

3027 **BiCMOS** Bipolar Complementary Metal-Oxide-Semiconductor, integrated circuit made up of
3028 bipolar junction transistor and CMOS logic gate. 161

3029 **BSM** Beyond Standard Model. 1, 8, 69, 76, 78, 166

3030 **CAD** Computer-aided Design. 159

3031 **CC** Charged-Current, usually in the context of neutrino interactions. 38

3032 **CERN** Conseil Européen pour la Recherche Nucléaire, the European Council for Nuclear Research.
3033 15, 29

3034 **CHARM** The CERN High energy Accelerator Mixed field facility. 21

3035 **CKM** Cabibbo-Kobayashi-Maskawa. 11

3036 **CL** Confidence Level. 144

3037 **CMB** Cosmic Microwave Background. 9, 11, 12

3038 **CMS** Compact Muon Solenoid, an LHC experiment located at IP5. 31, 32

3039 **CP** Charge-Parity. 6, 7, 11, 21, 23

3040 **CR** Control Region. 75, 78

3041 **DAC** Digital-to-Analogue Converts, used internally in ASIC chip. 161

3042 **DAQ** Data Acquisition. 50

3043 **DM** Dark matter. 1, 8, 9, 11, 12, 14, 15

3044 **DPMJET** Dual Parton Model (+ Jet), a MC generator for hadronic interactions based on the
3045 dual parton model. 72

3046 **ECAL** Electromagnetic Calorimeter. 2, 47, 58, 60–63, 151

3047 **EHN1** Experimental Hall North 1, an extension of the Neutrino Platform at the CERN Prévessin
3048 site. 151, 156

3049 **EM** Electromagnetic. 2, 47, 58, 63, 81, 111, 147

3050 **EPOS-LHC** Energy conserving quantum mechanical approach, based on Partons, parton ladders,
3051 strings, Off-shell remnants, and Splitting of parton ladders, an event generator. 68–73, 96

3052 **EWSB** Electroweak Symmetry Breaking. 5, 11, 21, 22, 25

3053 **FASER** The Forward Search Experiment, an LHC experiment built to search for long-lived par-
3054 ticles and to detect collider neutrinos. Located in the forward region 480 m from IP1. i, 1, 2,
3055 4, 12, 15–17, 19–22, 26, 28, 29, 31, 33–40, 42, 43, 47–49, 53, 55, 56, 58, 60–63, 69, 72, 74, 85,
3056 88, 94, 102, 106, 109, 144, 146, 166

3057 **FCNC** Flavour-changing Neutral-current. 24, 25, 71

3058 **FLUKA** Fluktuiierende Kaskade (Fluctuating Cascade), a general purpose tool for calculations of
3059 particle transport and interactions with matter. 40, 69

3060 **FORESEE** Forward Experiment Sensitivity Estimator. 69, 70, 81, 109

3061 **FPGA** Field Programmable Gate Arrays, integrated circuits. 162

3062 **GENIE** Generates Events for Neutrino Interaction Experiments, a neutrino event generator. 69,
3063 72

3064 **HERWIG** Hadron Emission Reactions With Interfering Gluons, an event generator. xiv, 71

3065 **HNL** Heavy Neutral Lepton. 15

3066 **HV** High Voltage. 98, 163

3067 **IFT** Interface Tracker, part of FASER’s tracking system. 38, 43, 151

3068 **IP** Interaction Point, location on the LHC ring where the two proton beams cross. 16, 31–35, 37,
3069 38, 40, 42, 88

3070 **KLOE** The K_L^0 Long Experiment. 21

3071 **KOTO** The K_0 to Tokai Experiment. 28

3072 **LEP** Large Electron-Positron Collider. 28, 34

3073 **LHC** Large Hadron Collider. 1, 12, 16, 29, 31–37, 49, 65

3074 **LHCb** LHC Beauty experiment, an LHC experiment located at IP8. 21, 28, 31, 32, 47, 53, 61–63

3075 **LHCf** LHC Forward experiment, an LHC experiment designed to study the origin of ultra-high-
3076 energy cosmic rays. Consists of two independent detectors 140 m either side of IP1. 31

3077 **LINAC** Linear accelerator, used to inject protons and ions into the CERN accelerator complex.
3078 29

3079 **LLP** Long-lived particles. i, 4, 19, 23, 28, 35, 53, 69, 78

3080 **LO** Leading Order. 67

3081 **LOS** Line of Sight. 16, 17, 33, 37

3082 **LS** Long Shutdown, period of shutdown for the LHC machine. 32

3083 **LV** Low Voltage. 162

3084 **MC** Monte Carlo simulation, named for the Monico casino. 2, 65, 69, 72–74, 78, 80, 85, 86, 89,
3085 98, 101, 106, 116, 138

3086 **MIP** Minimum Ionising Particle. 59, 60, 83, 98, 111, 112, 121, 154

3087 **MoEDAL** Monopole and Exotics Detector at the LHC, an LHC experiment built to search for
3088 the magnetic monopole. Located at IP8. 31, 32

3089 **MPV** Most Probable Value, derived from a Landau fit. 98, 153

3090 **NLO** Next-to-Leading Order. 67

3091 **NuCal** The ν -Calorimeter Experiment. 21

3092 **PBC** CERN Physics Beyond Colliders study group. 15, 23

3093 **PDF** Parton Distribution Function. 66, 68, 71, 75. Probability Density Function. 75, 76.

3094 **PID** Particle Identification. 43, 124

3095 **PMT** Photomultiplier Tube. 39, 40, 42, 47–50, 53, 55, 56, 98

3096 **POWHEG** Positive Weight Hardest Emission Generator, an event generator. 67, 68, 71

3097 **PQ** Peccei-Quinn. 21

3098 **PS** 67, 112 Proton Synchrotron. 29.

3099 **QCD** Quantum Chromodynamics. 7, 21, 23, 67

3100 **QED** Quantum Electrodynamics. 6, 7

3101 **QGSJET** Quark Gluon String (+ Jet), a MC generator for hadronic interactions based on the
3102 quark gluon string model. 68, 72, 96

3103 **RF** Radiofrequency, RF cavities are used for beam acceleration in the LHC. 31

3104 **SC** Super-column, part of the preshower ASIC substructure. 161

3105 **SCT** Semiconductor Tracker, ATLAS modules used in the FASER tracking detector. 45, 53–55

3106 **SiGe** Silicon-Germanium. 161

3107 **SLAC** Stanford Linear Accelerator Center. 28

3108 **SM** Standard Model of Particle Physics. 1, 2, 4, 6–8, 11, 12, 14–17, 20–22, 28, 70, 76, 78, 80, 106

3109 **SMD** Surface Mounting Devices. 159

3110 **SMU** Source and Measurement Units, devices to generate and simultaneously measure voltages
3111 and currents. 162

3112 **SND@LHC** Scattering and Neutrino Detector, an LHC experiment built for the detection of
3113 collider neutrinos. Located in the forward region 480 m from IP1. 31

3114 **SP** Super-pixel, part of the preshower ASIC substructure. 161

3115 **SPI** Serial Peripheral Interface, a communication protocol. 161

3116 **SPS** Super Proton Synchrotron. 29, 34

3117 **SR** Signal Region. 75, 78

3118 **TAN** Target Absorber for Neutral particles. 35

3119 **TAS** Target Absorber for Secondary particles. 35

3120 **TB** Test Beam. 136

3121 **TDAQ** Trigger and Data Acquisition System. 48–50

3122 **TI12** Location of the FASER experiment, a former service tunnel connecting the SPS to LEP. 37,
3123 151

3124 **TLB** Trigger Logic Board. 49, 50

3125 **TOTEM** Total Elastic and diffractive cross section Measurement, an LHC experiment aimed at
3126 measuring total cross section, elastic scattering and diffraction processes. Located at IP5. 31,
3127 32

3128 **TRB** Tracker Readout Board. 49

3129 **TYVEK** TYVEK Paper. 47

3130 **UV** Ultraviolet. 7, 15, 25

3131 **WIMP** Weakly interacting massive particle. 11, 12, 14

3132 **WLS** Wavelength shifting fibres or rods. 39, 62, 167

3133 **YETS** Year End Technical Stop. 32, 43, 159

Bibliography

- 3134
- 3135 [1] **FASEER** Collaboration, H. Abreu *et al.*, “Search for dark photons with the FASEER detector
3136 at the LHC,” *Phys. Lett. B* **848** (2024) 138378, [arXiv:2308.05587](https://arxiv.org/abs/2308.05587) [hep-ex].
- 3137 [2] **FASEER** Collaboration, , “Search for Axion-Like Particles in Photonic Final States with the
3138 FASEER Detector at the LHC,” (2024) . <https://cds.cern.ch/record/2892328?ln=en>.
- 3139 [3] M. Cacciari and G. Hamel de Monchenault, “Standard Model Theory Calculations and
3140 Experimental Tests,” *Comptes Rendus Physique* **16** (2015) no. 4, 368–378.
3141 <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.crhy.2015.04.004>.
- 3142 [4] **Particle Data Group** Collaboration, S. Navas *et al.*, “Review of Particle Physics,” *Phys.*
3143 *Rev. D* **110** (2024) .
- 3144 [5] **Katrin** Collaboration, , “Direct neutrino-mass measurement with sub-electronvolt
3145 sensitivity,” *Nat. Phys.* **18** (2022) 160–166.
- 3146 [6] **ATLAS** Collaboration, , “Observation of a New Particle in the Search for the Standard
3147 Model Higgs Boson with the ATLAS Detector at the LHC,” *Phys. Lett. B* **716** (2012) no. 1,
3148 1–29. <https://doi.org/10.1016/j.physletb.2012.08.020>.
- 3149 [7] **CMS** Collaboration, , “Observation of a New Boson at a Mass of 125 GeV with the CMS
3150 Experiment at the LHC,” *Phys. Lett. B* **716** (2012) no. 1, 30–61.
3151 <https://doi.org/10.48550/arXiv.1207.7235>.
- 3152 [8] J. Ellis, “Outstanding Questions: Physics Beyond the Standard Model,” *Phil. Trans. R.*
3153 *Soc. A* **370** (2012) 818–830.

- 3154 [9] M. C. Gonzalez-Garcia, “Neutrino Masses and Mixing: Evidence and Implications,” *Rev.*
3155 *Mod. Phys.* **75** (2003) no. 345, . <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/RevModPhys.75.345>.
- 3156 [10] R. Alkofer and H. Reinhardt, *Chiral Quark Dynamics*. Springer-Verlag Berlin Heidelberg,
3157 Germany, 1995.
- 3158 [11] D. Wu, “A brief introduction to the strong CP problem,” *Zeitschrift für Naturforschung A*
3159 **52** (1997) no. 1-2, 179–182. <https://doi.org/10.1515/zna-1997-1-245>.
- 3160 [12] M. Thomson, *Modern Particle Physics*. Cambridge University Press, 2013.
- 3161 [13] A. Hoecker and Z. Ligeti, “CP Violation and the CKM Matrix,” *Annual Review of Nuclear*
3162 *and Particle Science* **56** (2006) no. 1, 501–567.
- 3163 [14] R. D. Peccei and H. R. Quinn, “CP Conservation in the Presence of Pseudoparticles,” *Phys.*
3164 *Rev. Lett.* **38** (1977) 1440–1443.
- 3165 [15] F. Wilczek, “Problem of Strong P and T Invariance in the Presence of Instantons,” *Phys.*
3166 *Rev. Lett.* **40** (1978) 279–282.
- 3167 [16] J. L. Feng, “Dark matter candidates from particle physics and methods of detection,”
3168 *Annual Review of Astronomy and Astrophysics* **48** (2010) no. 1, 495–545.
3169 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1146/annurev-astro-082708-101659>.
- 3170 [17] E. Babichev *et al.*, “Gravitational Origin of Dark Matter,” *Phys. Rev. D* **94** (2016) no. 8, .
3171 <https://doi.org/10.48550/arXiv.1604.08564>.
- 3172 [18] **Planck** Collaboration, , “Planck 2018 Results. IV. Diffuse Component Separation,” *Astron.*
3173 *Astrophys.f* **641** (2020) . <https://doi.org/10.48550/arXiv.1807.06208>.
- 3174 [19] R. H. Wechsler and J. L. Tinker, “The Connection Between Galaxies and Their Dark
3175 Matter Halos,” *Annual Review of Astronomy and Astrophysics* **56** (2018) no. 1, 435–487.
3176 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1146/annurev-astro-081817-051756>.
- 3177 [20] E. Corbelli and P. Salucci, “The Extended Rotation Curve and the Dark Matter Halo of
3178 M33,” *Monthly Notices of the Royal Astronomical Society* **311** (2000) no. 2, 441–447.
3179 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1046/j.1365-8711.2000.03075.x>.

- 3180 [21] R. Massey, T. Kitching, and J. Richard, “The dark matter of gravitational lensing,” *Reports*
3181 *on Progress in Physics* **73** (2010) no. 8, 086901.
3182 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1088/0034-4885/73/8/086901>.
- 3183 [22] S. Ritz *et al.*, “Building for Discovery: Strategic Plan for U.S Particle Physics in the Global
3184 Context,” (2014) . <https://inspirehep.net/literature/1299183>.
- 3185 [23] G. White, “The sakharov conditions,” in *Electroweak Baryogenesis (Second Edition)*,
3186 2053-2563, pp. 2–1 to 2–2. IOP Publishing, 2022.
3187 <https://dx.doi.org/10.1088/978-0-7503-3571-3ch2>.
- 3188 [24] I. Esteban, M. C. Gonzalez-Garcia, and M. Maltoni, “On the determination of leptonic cp
3189 violation and neutrino mass ordering in presence of non-standard interactions: present
3190 status,” *Journal of High Energy Physics* **2019** (2019) no. 6, .
3191 [http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/JHEP06\(2019\)055](http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/JHEP06(2019)055).
- 3192 [25] M. Battaglieri *et al.*, “US Cosmic Visions: New Ideas in Dark Matter 2017: Community
3193 Report,” (2017) , [arXiv:1707.04591 \[hep-ph\]](https://arxiv.org/abs/1707.04591). <https://arxiv.org/abs/1707.04591>.
- 3194 [26] F. S. Queiroz, “Dark Matter Overview: Collider, Direct and Indirect Detection Searches,”
3195 2016. <https://arxiv.org/abs/1605.08788>.
- 3196 [27] A. Boveia and C. Doglioni, “Dark Matter Searches at Colliders,” *Annual Review of Nuclear*
3197 *and Particle Science* **68** (2018) no. 1, 429–459.
3198 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1146/annurev-nucl-101917-021008>.
- 3199 [28] T. Bringmann, T. Edsjö, P. Gondolo, P. Ullio, and L. Bergström, “DarkSUSY 6: An
3200 advanced tool to compute dark matter properties numerically,” *Journal of Cosmology and*
3201 *Astroparticle Physics* **2018** (2018) no. 07, 033–033.
3202 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1088/1475-7516/2018/07/033>.
- 3203 [29] **Planck** Collaboration, N. Aghanim *et al.*, “Planck 2018 results. VI. Cosmological
3204 parameters,” *Astron. Astrophys.* **641** (2020) A6, [arXiv:1807.06209 \[astro-ph.CO\]](https://arxiv.org/abs/1807.06209).
3205 [Erratum: *Astron.Astrophys.* 652, C4 (2021)].

- 3206 [30] R. J. Scherrer and M. S. Turner, “On the Relic, Cosmic Abundance of Stable Weakly
3207 Interacting Massive Particles,” *Phys. Rev. D* **33** (1986) 1585. [Erratum: Phys.Rev.D 34,
3208 3263 (1986)].
- 3209 [31] J. L. Feng and J. Kumar, “The WIMPless Miracle: Dark Matter Particles without
3210 Weak-scale Masses or Weak Interactions,” (2008) .
3211 <https://arxiv.org/pdf/0803.4196.pdf>.
- 3212 [32] M. Strassler and K. Zurek, “Echoes of a Hidden Valley at Hadron Colliders,” (2006) .
3213 <https://arxiv.org/pdf/hep-ph/0604261.pdf>.
- 3214 [33] **FASER** Collaboration, A. Ariga *et al.*, “FASER’s Physics Reach for Long-lived Particles,”
3215 *Phys. Rev. D* **99** (2019) no. 9, 095011, [arXiv:1811.12522](https://arxiv.org/abs/1811.12522) [[hep-ph](#)].
- 3216 [34] J. Beacham *et al.*, “Physics beyond colliders at CERN: beyond the Standard Model working
3217 group report,” *Journal of Physics G: Nuclear and Particle Physics* **47** (2019) no. 1, 010501.
3218 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1088/1361-6471/ab4cd2>.
- 3219 [35] J. L. Feng, I. Galon, F. Kling, and S. Trojanowski, “ForwArd Search ExpeRiment at the
3220 LHC,” *Phys. Rev. D* **97** (2018) no. 3, 035001, [arXiv:1708.09389](https://arxiv.org/abs/1708.09389) [[hep-ph](#)].
- 3221 [36] J. L. Feng, I. Galon, F. Kling and S. Trojanowski, “ALPs at FASER: The LHC as a Photon
3222 Beam Dump,” *Physical Review D* **98** (2021) no. 5, .
3223 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.98.055021>.
- 3224 [37] F. Kling and S. Trojanowski, “Looking forward to test the KOTO anomaly with FASER,”
3225 *Phys. Rev. D* **102** (2020) no. 1, 015032, [arXiv:2006.10630](https://arxiv.org/abs/2006.10630) [[hep-ph](#)].
- 3226 [38] E. Izaguirre, T. Lin and B. Shuve, “A New Flavor of Searches for Axion-Like Particles,”
3227 *Physical Review Letters* **118** (2017) no. 11, .
3228 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.118.111802>.
- 3229 [39] **FASER** Collaboration, , “Technical Proposal for FASER: ForwArd Search ExpeRiment at
3230 the LHC,” (2018) , [arXiv:1812.09139](https://arxiv.org/abs/1812.09139).

- 3231 [40] S. Biswas *et al.*, “Searching for Massless Dark Photons at the LHC via Higgs Boson
3232 Production,” *PoS EPS-HEP2017* (2017) 315.
- 3233 [41] M. Bauer, P. Foldenauer and J. Jaeckel, “Hunting All the Hidden Photons,” (2019) .
3234 <https://arxiv.org/pdf/1803.05466>.
- 3235 [42] **Particle Data Group** Collaboration, P. A. Zyla *et al.*, “Review of Particle Physics,”
3236 *Progress of Theoretical and Experimental Physics* **2020** (2020) .
3237 <https://doi.org/10.1093/ptep/ptaa104>.
- 3238 [43] D. Curtin, R. Essig, S. Gori, and J. Shelton, “Illuminating dark photons with high-energy
3239 colliders,” *Journal of High Energy Physics* **2015** (2015) no. 2, .
3240 [http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/JHEP02\(2015\)157](http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/JHEP02(2015)157).
- 3241 [44] A. Berlin and F. Kling, “Inelastic dark matter at the LHC lifetime frontier: ATLAS, CMS,
3242 LHCb, CODEX-b, FASER, and MATHUSLA,” *Physical Review D* **99** (2019) no. 1, .
3243 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.99.015021>.
- 3244 [45] **BaBar** Collaboration, J. P. Lees *et al.*, “Search for a Dark Photon in e^+e^- Collisions at
3245 BaBar,” *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **113** (2014) no. 20, 201801, [arXiv:1406.2980](https://arxiv.org/abs/1406.2980) [hep-ex].
- 3246 [46] F. Archilli, D. Babusci, D. Badoni, *et al.*, “Search for a Vector Gauge Boson in ϕ Meson
3247 Decays with the KLOE Detector,” *Physics Letters B* **706** (2012) no. 4–5, 251–255.
3248 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.physletb.2011.11.033>.
- 3249 [47] **LHCb** Collaboration, , “Search for Dark Photons Produced in 13 TeV Collisions,” *Physical*
3250 *Review Letters* **120** (2018) no. 6, .
3251 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.120.061801>.
- 3252 [48] , “Search for Leptonic Decays of the Dark Photon at NA62,” [arXiv:2312.12055](https://arxiv.org/abs/2312.12055) [hep-ex].
3253 <https://arxiv.org/abs/2312.12055>.
- 3254 [49] **NA62** Collaboration, , “Search for Dark Photon Decays to $\mu^+\mu^-$ at NA62,”
3255 [arXiv:2303.08666](https://arxiv.org/abs/2303.08666) [hep-ex]. <https://arxiv.org/abs/2303.08666>.

- 3256 [50] NA64 Collaboration, , “Search for a Hypothetical 16.7 MeV Gauge Boson and Dark
3257 Photons in the NA64 Experiment at CERN,” *Physical Review Letters* **120** (2018) no. 23, .
3258 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.120.231802>.
- 3259 [51] NA48/2 Collaboration, , “Search for the Dark Photon in π^0 Decays,” [arXiv:1504.00607](https://arxiv.org/abs/1504.00607)
3260 [[hep-ex](https://arxiv.org/abs/1504.00607)]. <https://arxiv.org/abs/1504.00607>.
- 3261 [52] E. M. Riordan, M. W. Krasny, K. Lang, *et al.*, “Search for Short-lived Axions in an
3262 Electron-Beam-Dump Experiment,” *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **59** (1987) 755–758.
3263 <https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevLett.59.755>.
- 3264 [53] M. Davier and H. Nguyen Ngoc, “An Unambiguous Search for a Light Higgs Boson,”
3265 *Physics Letters B* **229** (1989) no. 1, 150–155.
3266 <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/0370269389901743>.
- 3267 [54] J. Blumlein *et al.*, “Limits on the mass of light (pseudo)scalar particles from Bethe-Heitler
3268 e^+e^- and $\mu^+\mu^-$ pair production in a proton - iron beam dump experiment,” *Int. J. Mod.*
3269 *Phys. A* **7** (1992) 3835–3850.
- 3270 [55] J. D. Bjorken, S. Ecklund, W. R. Nelson, *et al.*, “Search for neutral metastable penetrating
3271 particles produced in the slac beam dump,” *Phys. Rev. D* **38** (1988) 3375–3386.
3272 <https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevD.38.3375>.
- 3273 [56] F. Bergsma, J. Dorenbosch, J. Allaby, *et al.*, “Search for Axion-like Particle Production in
3274 400 GeV Proton-Copper Interactions,” *Physics Letters B* **157** (1985) no. 5, 458–462.
3275 <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/0370269385904009>.
- 3276 [57] S. Andreas, C. Niebuhr, and A. Ringwald, “New Limits on Hidden Photons from Past
3277 Electron Beam Dumps,” *Phys. Rev. D* **86** (2012) 095019, [arXiv:1209.6083](https://arxiv.org/abs/1209.6083) [[hep-ph](https://arxiv.org/abs/1209.6083)].
- 3278 [58] J. D. Bjorken, R. Essig, P. Schuster, and N. Toro, “New Fixed-Target Experiments to Search
3279 for Dark Gauge Forces,” *Phys. Rev. D* **80** (2009) 075018, [arXiv:0906.0580](https://arxiv.org/abs/0906.0580) [[hep-ph](https://arxiv.org/abs/0906.0580)].
- 3280 [59] P. Ilten, Y. Soreq, M. Williams and W. Xue, “Serendipity in Dark Photon Searches,”
3281 *Journal of High Energy Physics* **2018** (2018) no. 6, . <https://arxiv.org/abs/1801.04847>.

- 3282 [60] Y. Tsai, P. deNiverville, and M. X. Liu, “Dark Photon and Muon $g - 2$ Inspired Inelastic
3283 Dark Matter Models at the High-Energy Intensity Frontier,” *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **126** (2021)
3284 no. 18, 181801, [arXiv:1908.07525 \[hep-ph\]](#).
- 3285 [61] P. Hansson Adrian et al., “Dark Sectors and New, Light, Weakly-Coupled Particles,”
3286 (2013) , [arXiv:1311.0029 \[hep-ph\]](#). <https://arxiv.org/abs/1311.0029>.
- 3287 [62] T. Banks, Y. Nir and N. Seiberg, “Missing (up) Mass, Accidental Anomalous Symmetries,
3288 and the Strong CP Problem,” (1994) , [arXiv:hep-ph/9403203 \[hep-ph\]](#).
3289 <https://arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/9403203>.
- 3290 [63] H. Fukuda, M. Ibe, M. Suzuki and T. T. Yanagida, “A “Gauged”’ U(1) Peccei-Quinn
3291 Symmetry,” *Physics Letters B* **771** (2017) .
3292 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.physletb.2017.05.071>.
- 3293 [64] B. Doeblich, J. Jaeckel, F. Kahlhoefer, A. Ringwald, and K. Schmidt-Hoberg, “ALPtraum:
3294 ALP production in proton beam dump experiments,” *Journal of High Energy Physics* **2016**
3295 (2016) no. 2, .
- 3296 [65] S. Weinberg, “A New Light Boson?,” *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **40** (1978) 223–226.
- 3297 [66] D. Aloni, Y. Soreq and M. Williams, “Coupling QCD-scale axion-like particles to gluons,”
3298 *Physical Review Letters* **123** (2019) no. 3, .
3299 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.123.031803>.
- 3300 [67] **NA62** Collaboration, C. Lazzeroni *et al.*, “Study of the $K^\pm \rightarrow \pi^\pm \gamma \gamma$ decay by the NA62
3301 experiment,” *Phys. Lett. B* **732** (2014) 65–74, [arXiv:1402.4334 \[hep-ex\]](#).
- 3302 [68] **KTeV** Collaboration, E. Abouzaid *et al.*, “Final Results from the KTeV Experiment on the
3303 Decay $K_L \rightarrow \pi^0 \gamma \gamma$,” *Phys. Rev. D* **77** (2008) 112004, [arXiv:0805.0031 \[hep-ex\]](#).
- 3304 [69] **KOTO** Collaboration, J. K. Ahn *et al.*, “Search for the $K_L \rightarrow \pi^0 \nu \bar{\nu}$ and $K_L \rightarrow \pi^0 X^0$ decays
3305 at the J-PARC KOTO experiment,” *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **122** (2019) no. 2, 021802,
3306 [arXiv:1810.09655 \[hep-ex\]](#).

- 3307 [70] **E949** Collaboration, A. V. Artamonov *et al.*, “Search for the decay K^+ to $\pi^+\gamma\gamma$ in the π^+
3308 momentum region $P > 213$ MeV/c,” *Phys. Lett. B* **623** (2005) 192–199,
3309 [arXiv:hep-ex/0505069](https://arxiv.org/abs/hep-ex/0505069).
- 3310 [71] **E949** Collaboration, A. V. Artamonov *et al.*, “Study of the decay $K^+ \rightarrow \pi^+\nu\bar{\nu}$ in the
3311 momentum region $140 < P_\pi < 199$ MeV/c,” *Phys. Rev. D* **79** (2009) 092004,
3312 [arXiv:0903.0030](https://arxiv.org/abs/0903.0030) [hep-ex].
- 3313 [72] M. Bauer, M. Neubert, and A. Thamm, “Collider Probes of Axion-Like Particles,” *JHEP*
3314 **12** (2017) 044, [arXiv:1708.00443](https://arxiv.org/abs/1708.00443) [hep-ph].
- 3315 [73] **BaBar** Collaboration, , “Search for an Axion-Like Particle in B Meson Decays,”
3316 [arXiv:2111.01800](https://arxiv.org/abs/2111.01800) [hep-ex].
- 3317 [74] J. Jaeckel, P. C. Malta, and J. Redondo, “Decay Photons from the Axion-like Particles
3318 Burst of Type II Supernovae,” *Phys. Rev. D* **98** (2018) no. 5, 055032, [arXiv:1702.02964](https://arxiv.org/abs/1702.02964)
3319 [hep-ph].
- 3320 [75] S. Gori, G. Perez, and K. Tobioka, “KOTO vs. NA62 Dark Scalar Searches,” *JHEP* **08**
3321 (2020) 110, [arXiv:2005.05170](https://arxiv.org/abs/2005.05170) [hep-ph].
- 3322 [76] J. Jaeckel and M. Spannowsky, “Probing MeV to 90 GeV axion-like particles with LEP and
3323 LHC,” *Phys. Lett. B* **753** (2016) 482–487, [arXiv:1509.00476](https://arxiv.org/abs/1509.00476) [hep-ph].
- 3324 [77] R. Vanden Broeck, “THE CERN ACCELERATOR COMPLEX. Complexe des
3325 accélérateurs du CERN.” , 2019.
- 3326 [78] CERN, “Linear accelerator 4,” 2024.
3327 <https://home.cern/science/accelerators/linear-accelerator-4>.
- 3328 [79] J. Gareyte, “LHC Main Parameters,” *Part. Accel.* **50** (1995) 61–68.
3329 <https://inspirehep.net/literature/407420>.
- 3330 [80] O. S. Bruning, P. Collier, P. Lebrum et al., *LHC Design Report Vol. 1: The LHC Main*
3331 *Ring.* , 2004. <https://cds.cern.ch/record/782076/files/>.

- 3332 [81] **FASER** Collaboration, , “FASER Public Plots,” 2022.
3333 <https://faser-public-plots.app.cern.ch/>.
- 3334 [82] **ATLAS** Collaboration, G. Aad *et al.*, “Luminosity determination in pp collisions at
3335 $\sqrt{s} = 13$ TeV using the ATLAS detector at the LHC,” *Eur. Phys. J. C* **83** (2023) no. 10,
3336 982, [arXiv:2212.09379](https://arxiv.org/abs/2212.09379) [hep-ex].
- 3337 [83] Large Hadron Collider Committee, “Large Hadron Collider Committee: Minutes of the
3338 one-hundredth-and-fifty-fifth meeting held on Wednesday and Thursday, 13-14 September
3339 2023,” (2023) . <https://cds.cern.ch/record/2873699/files/LHCC-156.pdf>.
- 3340 [84] **FASER** Collaboration, A. Ariga *et al.*, “FASER: ForwArd Search ExpeRiment at the
3341 LHC,” [arXiv:1901.04468](https://arxiv.org/abs/1901.04468) [hep-ex].
- 3342 [85] **ATLAS** Collaboration, , “Characterisation and mitigation of beam-induced backgrounds
3343 observed in the ATLAS detector during the 2011 proton-proton run,” *Journal of*
3344 *Instrumentation* (2013) no. 07, P07004–P07004.
- 3345 [86] **FASER** Collaboration, , “First neutrino interaction candidates at the LHC,” *Phys. Rev. D*
3346 **104** (2021) L091101. <https://link.aps.org/doi/10.1103/PhysRevD.104.L091101>.
- 3347 [87] **FASER** Collaboration, H. Abreu *et al.*, “The FASER Detector,” *Journal of*
3348 *Instrumentation* **19** (2024) no. 05, P05066.
3349 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1088/1748-0221/19/05/P05066>.
- 3350 [88] **FASER** Collaboration, , “First Measurement of the ν_e and ν_μ Interaction Cross Sections at
3351 the LHC with FASER’s Emulsion Detector,” (2024) , [arXiv:2403.12520](https://arxiv.org/abs/2403.12520) [hep-ex].
- 3352 [89] Eljen Technology, “General purpose ej-200, ej-204, ej-208, ej-212,”
3353 [https://eljentechnology.com/products/plastic-scintillators/](https://eljentechnology.com/products/plastic-scintillators/ej-200-ej-204-ej-208-ej-212)
3354 [ej-200-ej-204-ej-208-ej-212](https://eljentechnology.com/products/plastic-scintillators/ej-200-ej-204-ej-208-ej-212).
- 3355 [90] Hamamatsu, “Photomultiplier tube assembly h11934,”. [https://www.hamamatsu.com/eu/](https://www.hamamatsu.com/eu/en/product/optical-sensors/pmt/pmt-assembly/head-on-type/H11934-100.html)
3356 [en/product/optical-sensors/pmt/pmt-assembly/head-on-type/H11934-100.html](https://www.hamamatsu.com/eu/en/product/optical-sensors/pmt/pmt-assembly/head-on-type/H11934-100.html).

- 3357 [91] Hamamatsu, “Photomultiplier tube assembly h6410,”. [https://www.hamamatsu.com/eu/](https://www.hamamatsu.com/eu/en/product/optical-sensors/pmt/pmt-assembly/head-on-type/H6410.html)
3358 [en/product/optical-sensors/pmt/pmt-assembly/head-on-type/H6410.html](https://www.hamamatsu.com/eu/en/product/optical-sensors/pmt/pmt-assembly/head-on-type/H6410.html).
- 3359 [92] G. Battistoni, T. Boehlen, F. Cerutti, P. W. Chin, L. S. Esposito, *et al.*, “Overview of the
3360 FLUKA Code,” *Annals of Nuclear Energy* **82** (2015) 10–18.
- 3361 [93] **FASER** Collaboration, , “The tracking detector of the FASER experiment,” *Nucl. Instrum.*
3362 *Meth. A* **1034** (2022) 166825, [arXiv:2112.01116](https://arxiv.org/abs/2112.01116) [physics.ins-det].
- 3363 [94] F. Campabadal *et al.*, “Design and performance of the ABCD3TA ASIC for readout of
3364 silicon strip detectors in the ATLAS semiconductor tracker,” *Nuclear Instruments and*
3365 *Methods in Physics Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and*
3366 *Associated Equipment* **552** (2005) no. 3, 292–328.
3367 <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0168900205013926>.
- 3368 [95] Hamamatsu, “Photomultiplier tube r7899,”. [https://www.hamamatsu.com/eu/en/](https://www.hamamatsu.com/eu/en/product/optical-sensors/pmt/pmt_tube-alone/head-on-type/R7899.html)
3369 [product/optical-sensors/pmt/pmt_tube-alone/head-on-type/R7899.html](https://www.hamamatsu.com/eu/en/product/optical-sensors/pmt/pmt_tube-alone/head-on-type/R7899.html).
- 3370 [96] **FASER** Collaboration, H. Abreu *et al.*, “The Trigger and Data Acquisition System of the
3371 FASER Experiment,” *Journal of Instrumentation* **16** (2021) no. 12, .
3372 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1088/1748-0221/16/12/P12028>.
- 3373 [97] **FASER** Collaboration, , “CALYPSO Software Framework,”.
3374 <https://gitlab.cern.ch/faser/calypso>.
- 3375 [98] **ATLAS** Collaboration, , “ATLAS ATHENA Software.” .
3376 <https://zenodo.org/record/2641997#.XhWRDC2ZPyI>.
- 3377 [99] G. Barrand *et al.*, “GAUDI - A software architecture and framework for building HEP data
3378 processing applications,” *Comput. Phys. Commun.* **140** (2001) 45–55.
- 3379 [100] R. E. Kalman, “A new approach to linear filtering and prediction problems,” *Journal of*
3380 *Basic Engineering* **82** (1960) no. 1, 35 – 45.

- 3381 [101] X. Ai, C. Allaire, N. Calace, *et al.*, “A common tracking software project,” *Computing and*
3382 *Software for Big Science* **6** (2022) no. 1, .
3383 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/s41781-021-00078-8>.
- 3384 [102] Gupta, M., “Calculation of Radiation Length in Materials,” tech. rep., CERN, Geneva, Jul,
3385 2010. <https://cds.cern.ch/record/1279627>.
- 3386 [103] V. Morisbak, “Search for New Physics with ATLAS at LHC - Z’ dilepton resonance at high
3387 mass,”. <https://cds.cern.ch/record/1327635>.
- 3388 [104] J. Cheng *et al.*, “Determination of the Total Absorption Peak in an Electromagnetic
3389 Calorimeter,” *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section A:*
3390 *Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equipment* **827** (2016) 165–170.
3391 <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0168900216303680>.
- 3392 [105] D. H. Wilkinson, “Ionization Energy Loss by Charged Particles Part I. The Landau
3393 Distribution,” *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section A:*
3394 *Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equipment* **383** (1996) no. 2,
3395 513–515. <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0168900296007747>.
- 3396 [106] S. Nyibule et al, “Birks Scaling of the Particle Light Output Functions for the EJ 299-33
3397 plastic scintillator,” *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section A:*
3398 *Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equipment* **768** (2014) 141–145.
3399 <https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0168900214010845>.
- 3400 [107] **LHCb** Collaboration, , *LHCb Calorimeters: Technical Design Report*. CERN, Geneva,
3401 2000. <http://cds.cern.ch/record/494264>.
- 3402 [108] Robbe, P., *Simulation of the LHCb Electromagnetic Calorimeter response with Geant4*. XI
3403 International Conference on Calorimetry in High Energy Physics, LHCb Calorimeter
3404 Group, (2004). <https://cds.cern.ch/record/1445300>.
- 3405 [109] Fabjan, C. W. and Gianotti, F., “Calorimetry for Particle Physics,” *Rev. Mod. Phys.* **75**
3406 (2003) 1243–1286.

- 3407 [110] J. M. Campbell *et al.*, “Event Generators for High-Energy Physics Experiments,” (2024) ,
3408 [arXiv:2203.11110 \[hep-ph\]](https://arxiv.org/abs/2203.11110). <https://arxiv.org/abs/2203.11110>.
- 3409 [111] A. Buckley *et al.*, “General-purpose event generators for LHC physics,” *Physics Reports*
3410 **504** (2011) no. 5, 145–233. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1016/j.physrep.2011.03.005>.
- 3411 [112] S. Höche, “Introduction to parton-shower event generators,” (2015) , [arXiv:1411.4085](https://arxiv.org/abs/1411.4085)
3412 [\[hep-ph\]](https://arxiv.org/abs/1411.4085). <https://arxiv.org/abs/1411.4085>.
- 3413 [113] Bothmann, Enrico and Singh Chahal, Gurpreet and Höche, Stefan and Krause, Johannes
3414 and Krauss, Frank and Kuttimalai, Silvan and Liebschner, Sebastian and Napoletano,
3415 Davide and Schönherr, Marek and Schulz, Holger and Schumann, Steffen and Siegert,
3416 Frank, “Event generation with Sherpa 2.2,” *SciPost Physics* **7** (2019) no. 3, .
3417 <http://dx.doi.org/10.21468/SciPostPhys.7.3.034>.
- 3418 [114] S. Frixione, P. Nason, and C. Oleari, “Matching NLO QCD computations with Parton
3419 Shower simulations: the POWHEG method,” *JHEP* **11** (2007) 070, [arXiv:0709.2092](https://arxiv.org/abs/0709.2092)
3420 [\[hep-ph\]](https://arxiv.org/abs/0709.2092).
- 3421 [115] T. Sjöstrand, S. Ask, J. R. Christiansen, R. Corke, N. Desai, P. Ilten, S. Mrenna, S. Prestel,
3422 C. O. Rasmussen, and P. Z. Skands, “An introduction to PYTHIA 8.2,” *Comput. Phys.*
3423 *Commun.* **191** (2015) 159–177, [arXiv:1410.3012 \[hep-ph\]](https://arxiv.org/abs/1410.3012).
- 3424 [116] C. Bierlich, S. Chakraborty, N. Desai, L. Gellersen, I. Helenius, *et al.*, “A Comprehensive
3425 Guide to the Physics and Usage of PYTHIA 8.3,” [arXiv:2203.11601 \[hep-ph\]](https://arxiv.org/abs/2203.11601).
- 3426 [117] P. Skands, S. Carrazza, and J. Rojo, “Tuning PYTHIA 8.1: the Monash 2013 tune,” *The*
3427 *European Physical Journal C* **74** (2014) no. 8, .
3428 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-014-3024-y>.
- 3429 [118] M. Fieg, F. Kling, H. Schulz, and T. Sjöstrand, “Tuning Pythia for Forward Physics
3430 Experiments,” *Phys. Rev. D* **109** (2024) no. 1, 016010, [arXiv:2309.08604 \[hep-ph\]](https://arxiv.org/abs/2309.08604).
- 3431 [119] V. Bertone, R. Gauld, and J. Rojo, “Neutrino Telescopes as QCD Microscopes,” *JHEP* **01**
3432 (2019) 217, [arXiv:1808.02034 \[hep-ph\]](https://arxiv.org/abs/1808.02034).

- 3433 [120] A. Bodek and U. ki Yang, “Axial and Vector Structure Functions for Electron- and
3434 Neutrino- Nucleon Scattering Cross Sections at all Q^2 using Effective Leading order Parton
3435 Distribution Functions,” [arXiv:1011.6592](https://arxiv.org/abs/1011.6592) [[hep-ph](#)].
- 3436 [121] M. Bonvini, S. Marzani, and T. Peraro, “Small-x resummation from HELL,” *The European*
3437 *Physical Journal C* **76** (2016) no. 11, .
3438 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-016-4445-6>.
- 3439 [122] P. Nason, “A New method for combining NLO QCD with shower Monte Carlo algorithms,”
3440 *JHEP* **11** (2004) 040, [arXiv:hep-ph/0409146](https://arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/0409146).
- 3441 [123] S. Porteboeuf, T. Pierog and K. Werner, “Producing Hard Processes Regarding the
3442 Complete Event: The EPOS Event Generator,” [arXiv:1006.2967](https://arxiv.org/abs/1006.2967) [[hep-ph](#)].
3443 <https://arxiv.org/abs/1006.2967>.
- 3444 [124] E.-J. Ahn, R. Engel, T. K. Gaisser, P. Lipari, and T. Stanev, “Cosmic ray interaction event
3445 generator SIBYLL 2.1,” *Physical Review D* **80** (2009) no. 9, .
3446 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.80.094003>.
- 3447 [125] S. Ostapchenko, “Monte Carlo treatment of hadronic interactions in enhanced Pomeron
3448 scheme: I. QGSJET-II model,” *Phys. Rev. D* **83** (2011) 014018, [arXiv:1010.1869](https://arxiv.org/abs/1010.1869)
3449 [[hep-ph](#)].
- 3450 [126] S. Roesler, R. Engel, and J. Ranft, “The Monte Carlo event generator DPMJET-III,” in
3451 *International Conference on Advanced Monte Carlo for Radiation Physics, Particle*
3452 *Transport Simulation and Applications (MC 2000)*, pp. 1033–1038. 12, 2000.
3453 [arXiv:hep-ph/0012252](https://arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/0012252).
- 3454 [127] C. Andreopoulos *et al.*, “The GENIE Neutrino Monte Carlo Generator,” *Nucl. Instrum.*
3455 *Meth. A* **614** (2010) 87–104, [arXiv:0905.2517](https://arxiv.org/abs/0905.2517) [[hep-ph](#)].
- 3456 [128] F. Kling and S. Trojanowski, “Forward Experiment Sensitivity Estimator for the LHC and
3457 Future Hadron Colliders,” *Physical Review D* **104** (2021) no. 3, .

- 3458 [129] L. Buonocore, F. Kling, L. Rottoli, and J. Sominka, “Predictions for Neutrinos and New
3459 Physics from Forward Heavy Hadron Production at the LHC,” [arXiv:2309.12793](#)
3460 [\[hep-ph\]](#).
- 3461 [130] F. Kling and L. J. Nevay, “Forward Neutrino Fluxes at the LHC,” *Phys. Rev. D* **104** (2021)
3462 [no. 11, 113008](#), [arXiv:2105.08270](#) [\[hep-ph\]](#).
- 3463 [131] J. L. Feng, F. Kling, M. Fieg, and R. Mammen Abraham, “Neutrino Rate Predictions for
3464 FASER,” [arXiv:2402.13318](#) [\[hep-ex\]](#). <https://arxiv.org/abs/2402.13318>.
- 3465 [132] A. Ferrari, P. R. Sala, A. Fasso, and J. Ranft, *FLUKA: A Multi-particle Transport Code*
3466 *(Program Version 2005)*. CERN Yellow Reports: Monographs. CERN, Geneva, 2005.
3467 <http://cds.cern.ch/record/898301>.
- 3468 [133] T. T. Böhlen, F. Cerutti, M. P. W. Chin, A. Fasso, A. Ferrari, *et al.*, “The FLUKA Code:
3469 Developments and Challenges for High Energy and Medical Applications,” *Nucl. Data*
3470 *Sheets* **120** (2014) 211–214.
- 3471 [134] M. Baak, G. J. Besjes, D. Côte, A. Koutsman, J. Lorenz, and D. Short, “HistFitter
3472 Software Framework for Statistical Data Analysis,” *Eur. Phys. J. C* **75** (2015) 153,
3473 [arXiv:1410.1280](#) [\[hep-ex\]](#).
- 3474 [135] Cowan, Glen and Cranmer, Kyle and Gross, Eilam and Vitells, Ofer, “Asymptotic formulae
3475 for likelihood-based tests of new physics,” *The European Physical Journal C* **71** (2011)
3476 [no. 2](#), . <http://dx.doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-011-1554-0>.
- 3477 [136] A. L. Read, “Presentation of search results: The CL_s technique,” *J. Phys. G* **28** (2002)
3478 [2693–2704](#).
- 3479 [137] **FASER** Collaboration, “First Results from the Search for Dark Photons with the FASER
3480 Detector at the LHC,”. <https://cds.cern.ch/record/2853210>.
- 3481 [138] **ATLAS** Collaboration, “Preliminary Analysis of the Luminosity Calibration of the ATLAS
3482 13.6 TeV Data Recorded in 2022.” ATL-DAPR-PUB-2023-001, 2023.
3483 <https://cds.cern.ch/record/2853525>.

- 3484 [139] G. Avoni *et al.*, “The new LUCID-2 detector for luminosity measurement and monitoring in
3485 ATLAS,” *JINST* **13** (2018) no. 07, P07017.
- 3486 [140] G. Kasieczka, B. Nachman, M. D. Schwartz, and D. Shih, “Automating the ABCD method
3487 with machine learning,” *Physical Review D* **103** (2021) no. 3, .
3488 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.103.035021>.
- 3489 [141] A. L. Read, “Modified Frequentist Analysis of Search Results (The CLs Method),” 2000.
3490 <https://cds.cern.ch/record/451614/files/p81.pdf>.
- 3491 [142] **FASER** Collaboration, H. Abreu *et al.*, “First Direct Observation of Collider Neutrinos
3492 with FASER at the LHC,” *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **131** (2023) no. 3, 031801, [arXiv:2303.14185](https://arxiv.org/abs/2303.14185)
3493 [[hep-ex](https://arxiv.org/abs/2303.14185)].
- 3494 [143] S. Tulin, “New weakly coupled forces hidden in low-energy QCD,” *Physical Review D* **89**
3495 (2014) no. 11, . <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.89.114008>.
- 3496 [144] B. Batell, A. Freitas, A. Ismail, and D. McKeen, “Probing Light Dark Matter with a
3497 Hadrophilic Scalar Mediator,” *Physical Review D* **100** (2019) no. 9, .
3498 <http://dx.doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.100.095020>.
- 3499 [145] F. Kling, S. Li, H. Song, S. Su, and W. Su, “Light Scalars at FASER,” *Journal of High*
3500 *Energy Physics* **2023** (2023) no. 8, . [http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/JHEP08\(2023\)001](http://dx.doi.org/10.1007/JHEP08(2023)001).
- 3501 [146] C. Cavanagh, “Faser’s electromagnetic calorimeter test beam studies,” *Instruments* **6** (2022)
3502 no. 3, . <https://www.mdpi.com/2410-390X/6/3/31>.
- 3503 [147] Machikhiliyan, I. and LHCb calorimeter group, “The LHCb electromagnetic calorimeter,” *J.*
3504 *Phys.: Conf. Ser.* **160** (2009) . <https://dx.doi.org/10.1088/1742-6596/160/1/012047>.
- 3505 [148] S. Agostinelli *et al.*, “Geant4 — A Simulation Toolkit,” *Nuclear Instruments and Methods*
3506 *in Physics Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated*
3507 *Equipment* **506** (2003) no. 3, 250–303.
- 3508 [149] **ATLAS** Collaboration, , “The VP1 ATLAS 3D Event Display.”
3509 <http://atlas-vp1.web.cern.ch/>.

- 3510 [150] N. Charitonidis and B. Rae, “The H2 Secondary Beam Line of EHN1/SPS,” 2017.
3511 http://sba.web.cern.ch/sba/BeamsAndAreas/H2/H2_presentation.html.
- 3512 [151] **FASEER** Collaboration, “The FASER W-Si High Precision Preshower Technical Proposal,”
3513 <https://cernbox.cern.ch/pdf-viewer/public/S4N1ULL8HWCRPom/>
3514 [FASERPreshowerUpgradeTechnicalProposal_LHCC_v2.pdf](https://cernbox.cern.ch/pdf-viewer/public/S4N1ULL8HWCRPom/FASERPreshowerUpgradeTechnicalProposal_LHCC_v2.pdf).